.

• **\*** • • •

•

A DESCH AND TH DETE TO

This stu

mierlying assum

l. That

itterrence and p

field of Crimina

Pod deal of the

forded on tradi

ed are as yet o

2. That

of the nation's

directed toward

tat police adm

have the benefit

<sup>lessior.s</sup>.

Followi Answer the foll

## ABSTRACT

51012

## A DESCRIPTIVE STUDY OF CERTAIN METHODS AND THEORIES OF CRIME PREVENTION AND DETERRENCE AND THEIR RELATIONSHIP TO EDUCATION AND TRAINING IN CRIMINAL JUSTICE PROGRAMS

By

Albert Gerald Isaac

This study was initiated by consideration of two underlying assumptions:

1. That certain methods and theories of crime deterrence and prevention which are in use throughout the field of Criminal Justice, and which form a basis for a good deal of the training and education in that field, are founded on tradition and "common sense" value judgements and are as yet untested.

2. That it is vitally important, especially in view of the nation's rising crime totals, that research be directed toward these certain methods and theories in order that police administrators, trainers, and educators may have the benefit of proven practices to use in their professions.

Following these assumptions the author set out to answer the following questions:

1. Consideri

relates v

crime det

sent stat

2. Is this t

has it re

while be

and educ

3. In polic

of visit

deterrer

which ca

researc

theory?

The eff

sury of police

mility as emb

station of ge

<sup>research</sup>. It w

ations might m

Thus th

that it will de Emposes of ind the it demons

Mich are bein Methods with a

<sup>Soze</sup> acceptabl

- 1. Considering the historical basis of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention, what is the present status of the theory?
- 2. Is this theory based on untested assumptions, and has it received credibility through traditional use while being carried on by the medium of training and educational programs in Criminal Justice?
- 3. In police programs which use and promote the theory of visibility and mobility as effective in crime deterrence and prevention, does a data base exist which can provide a starting point for future research aimed at testing and evaluation of this theory?

The effort to answer these questions prompted this study of police patrol, particularly as related to speed in mobility as embodied in the helicopter, with the added intention of generating some useable hypotheses for future research. It was also intended that some useful recommendations might result.

Thus the objectives of this study are two-fold in that it will describe the processes under discussion for purposes of inspection by researchers while at the same time it demonstrates some of the systems in present use which are being developed to evalulate patrol theories and methods with an eye to generating useable hypotheses and some acceptable and helpful recommendations.

Chapter I de ::::; describes the and presents zi zethods. Chapter II wit expounds the plice patrol and r maing, and educa Chapter II: miniclogy of coll messes which are Chapter IV ctained. This ch. in only with the Excliption. Chapter V Effication for Te previous chapt tics asked at the Pestions, the aut ti finally, as th ters hypotheses W this study, an Rofession of law Chapter I describes the purpose and scope of the study, describes the problems of theory and method in police patrol and presents the basis in history for these theories and methods.

ì

Chapter II consists of a review of the literature which expounds the theories and explains the methods of police patrol and relates them to the administration, training, and education of police officers.

Chapter III provides a view of the sources and methodology of collecting the data used to describe the processes which are under study.

Chapter IV furnishes a description of the data obtained. This chapter offers some minimal data analysis but only with the intention of providing a more complete description.

Chapter V is a summary of the study. It presents justification for the description, a general overview of the previous chapters, and an answer to each of the questions asked at the outset. As a further answer to these questions, the author provides some of his own conclusions and finally, as the ultimate end of a descriptive study, offers hypotheses for future research which are generated by this study, and recommendations for consideration by the profession of law enforcement.

A DESCRIP

AND THE

DETER

TO

С

in Part

A DESCRIPTIVE STUDY OF CERTAIN METHODS AND THEORIES OF CRIME PREVENTION AND DETERRENCE AND THEIR RELATIONSHIP TO EDUCATION AND TRAINING IN CRIMINAL JUSTICE PROGRAMS

1

r

)

1

1

١

.

By

Albert Gerald Isaac

### A DISSERTATION

Submitted to Michigan State University in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of

## DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

Department of Education

Copyright by ALBERT GERALD ISAAC 1976

.

}

1

t

1

1

1

)

Dedicated to

,

)

ł

)

1 •

1

My wife, Virginia

For encouragement, and oh, so much patience

I wish to : Warner Eli Life Corporation Linda Gebh zi technical advi My working me Michigan State Arthur F. initial Justice a and guidance. And I wan eigiven by my c Dr. Dale 141 Dr. Walte <sup>Inhanging</sup> face o Dr. Char] Reading and erus And of c <sup>12 has</sup> made me et.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I wish to thank:

)

١

1

5

1

Warner Eliot, for permission to use the unpublished Mitre Corporation study data.

Linda Gebhard for excellent typing, proofreading, and technical advice.

My working partner, Captain Burton L. Yungfer of the Michigan State Police, for encouragement and advice.

Arthur F. Brandstatter, Director of the School of Criminal Justice and former Detroit police officer, for help and guidance.

And I want to acknowledge with gratitude the special aid given by my committee:

Dr. Dale Alam for last minute heroics in my hour of need;

Dr. Walter Scott, for giving me a view of the unchanging face of education;

Dr. Charles A. Blackman, Chairman, for gentle prodding and erudite direction;

And of course, my teacher, Dr. Robert Trojanowicz who has made me understand that knowledge is worth any effort.

iii

UST OF TABLES. .

DIRODUCTION •

Purpose and Score Limitations of S

Lipter

: THE THEOPETT PATROL.

> Areas for of Visi Historica The Tradi America Significa Goal of t Design of

Limitatio Summary

E. REVIEW OF

Views of Speed in Some Dou Suggesti Ratior Enter th Visibi

Implicat Summary

HETHODOLO

Basis c Sources

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

)

1

1

1

ı.

ł

LIST OF TABLES. vi   INTRODUCTION 1   Purpose and Scope of Study 1   Limitations of Study 1   Limitations of Study 1   Chapter 2   I. THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY OF POLICE PATROL. 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 6   Historical Background of the Theory to America. 7   The Traditional Passing of the Theory to America. 13   Significance of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 21   Design of the Study 223   LI. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 225   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 226   Sugestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 57   Visibility. 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84			Page
INTRODUCTION 1   Purpose and Scope of Study 1   Limitations of Study 2   Chapter 2   I. THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY OF POLICE PATROL. 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 6   Historical Background of the Theory to America. 7   The Traditional Passing of the Theory to 13   Significance of the Study 121   Design of the Study 223   Limitations of the Study 223   Summary 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	LIST OF TABLES	• •	vi
Purpose and Scope of Study	INTRODUCTION	• •	<b>1</b>
Chapter   I. THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY OF POLICE PATROL. 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 6   Historical Background of the Theory to America. 7   The Traditional Passing of the Theory to America. 13   Significance of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 21   Design of the Study 22   Limitations of the Study 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 43   Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Purpose and Scope of Study	•••	1 2
I. THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY OF POLICE PATROL. 3   Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility 6   Historical Background of the Theory 7   The Traditional Passing of the Theory to America. 13   Significance of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 21   Design of the Study 22   Limitations of the Study 23   Summary 23   Summary 23   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 74   Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84	Chapter		
Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility	I. THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY OF POLI	CE	2
Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility	PATROL.	• •	, 3
of Visibility and Mobility 6   Historical Background of the Theory 7   The Traditional Passing of the Theory to 7   America. 13   Significance of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 121   Design of the Study 222   Limitations of the Study 23   Summary 23   Summary 23   Summary 23   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Areas for Study Concerning the Theory		
Historical Background of the Theory	of Visibility and Mobility		, 6
The Traditional Passing of the Theory to America	Historical Background of the Theory	• •	, 7
America. 13   Significance of the Study 15   Goal of the Study 121   Design of the Study 22   Limitations of the Study 23   Summary 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	The Traditional Passing of the Theory to		1 0
Significance of the Study 11   Goal of the Study 11   Design of the Study 12   Limitations of the Study 13   Summary 13   Summary 13   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 13   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 14   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 129   Some Doubts About the Rationale 142   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 143   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 11 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84		• •	, 13 15
Goal of the Study 22   Limitations of the Study 23   Summary 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 24   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Significance of the Study	• •	, 15
Jesign of the Study 23   Limitations of the Study 23   Summary 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Goal of the Study	• •	, <u>21</u> 22
III. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 23   II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 242   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Limitations of the Study	• •	23
II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE 25   Views of the Rationale of Patrol 26   Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84	Summary	•••	, 23
Views of the Rationale of Patrol26Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility29Some Doubts About the Rationale42Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale43Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility57Implications for Trainers and Educators74Summary81III. METHODOLOGY84Basis of Necessity for Description84Sources of Data84	II. REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE	• •	, 25
Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility 29   Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 57   Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data 84	Views of the Rationale of Patrol		26
Some Doubts About the Rationale 42   Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the 43   Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 57   Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data 84	Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility		29
Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data 84	Some Doubts About the Rationale	•	42
Rationale 43   Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore 57   Visibility 57   Implications for Trainers and Educators 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data 84	Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the		
Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore Visibility	Rationale	• •	. 43
Visibility	Enter the Helicopter, More SpeedMore		
Implications for Trainers and Educators. 74   Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data. 86	Visibility.	• •	. 57
Summary 81   III. METHODOLOGY. 84   Basis of Necessity for Description 84   Sources of Data. 84	Implications for Trainers and Educators.	• •	. 74
III. METHODOLOGY	Summary	• •	. 81
Basis of Necessity for Description 84 Sources of Data	III. METHODOLOGY	•	. 84
Sources of Data.	Basis of Necessity for Description	_	. 84
	Sources of Data.	•	86

lipter Techniques Proposed F Summary . T. DESCRIPTION Bases for Data from The Vehicl Frequency Patrol. The Probl. Patrol. The Chest Examples Tucson, A Detroit, Columbus, . Lansing, Los Angel Warren, M San Berna Pasadena, Maryland. Washingto The Youn Program Fairfax ( Richmond, San Fran Summary V. SUMMARY ALL Findings Addition Conclusi Implicat Recontrier. SECOICES kppendi**x** A. Author S. <sup>B.</sup> Chester g BELIOGRAPHY .

# Chapter

	Techniques of Data Collection	•	•	•	89
	Proposed Potential of Data	•	•	•	90
	Summary	•	•	•	102
IV.	DESCRIPTION OF THE DATA	•	•	•	104
	Bases for Evaluation.	•	•	•	104
	Data from the Past	•	•	•	105
	The Vehicles	•	•	•	115
	Frequency of the Use of Helicopters in				
	Patrol.	•	•	•	132
	The Problems in Using Helicopters for				
		•	•	•	145
	The Chester Survey of Mission Evaluati	on	•	•	155
	Examples of Evaluation Formulae	•	•	•	159
	Tucson, Arizona	•	•	•	160
	Detroit, Michigan	•	•	•	167
	Columbus, Ohio	•	•	•	170
	Lansing, Michigan	•	•	•	176
	Los Angeles, California.	•	•		180
	Warren, Michigan	•		•	185
	San Bernardino County, California				186
	Pasadena, California,			•	187
	Maryland.	•	•	•	188
	Washington, D.C.	•	•.	•	1 2 0
	The Young Evaluations of Four Molicont	•	•	•	109
	Brograma	er			100
	Programs	•	•	•	190
	Pairiax County, Virginia	•	•	•	194
	Richmond, California.	•	•	•	196
	San Francisco, California	•	•	•	196
	Summary	•	•	•	197
v.	SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS	•	•	•	199
	Findings				208
	Additional Findings	•	•	•	200
	Conclusions	•	•	•	214
	Tmpligations for Mrainang and Educator	•	•	•	210
	Implications for Trainers and Educator	S	•	•	218
	Recommendations for Further Study .	•	•	•	219
APPENI	DICES				
Append	dix				
A.	Author Survey Instrument	•	•	•	222
в.	Chester Survey Instrument	•	•	•	228
BIBLI	OGRAPHY	•	•	•	237

Page

Ter le 1. Law Enforce Performe Selected 2. Comparativ (Annual 3. Comparati (Hourly 4. Cost of H Per Day 5. 1976 Inve Agenci Specif f. Inventor County Manufa 7. Distrib: Agenci 3. Tempora in Sa Per M 9. Countie in La Popul 10. Operati Agenc 1. Answers Agenc 12. Answers Agenci

## LIST OF TABLES

Table				Page
1.	Law Enforcement and Related Missions Performed by Helicopters for Selected Agencies	•	•	107
2.	Comparative Helicopter Cost Data (Annual Basis)	•	•	108
3.	Comparative Helicopter Cost Data (Hourly Basis)	•	•	108
4.	Cost of Helicopter Patrol Eight Hours Per Day (Annual Basis)	•	•	109
5.	1976 Inventory of Law Enforcement Agencies Using Helicopters Including Specification Data	•	•	117
6.	Inventory of Helicopters Used by State, County, and Local Police Agencies by Manufacturer and Model	•	•	133
7.	Distribution of Flying Time in Sample Agencies by Average Hours Per Month .	•	•	134
8.	Temporal Distribution of Flying Time in Sample Agencies by Average Hours Per Month	•	•	134
9.	Counties and Localities Using Helicopters in Law Enforcement Activities by Population, Area Size, and Density .	•	•	136
10.	Operational Problems Reported by Sample Agencies by Frequency	•	•	147
11.	Answers to Question 22 by Sample Agencies According to Frequency	•	•	150
12.	Answers to Question 23 by Sample Agencies According to Frequency	•	•	151

<u>e le</u> 13. Answers to nswers to C Agencies A H. Answers to Agencies 3. Major Missi and Modal Rating by by Popula M. Major Missi and Modal Rating by by Popula U. Tucson Pol H. Tucson Pol Findings 3. Detroit Po of Helic 22. Detroit Po Cost-Eff 21. Detroit Po ment of 22. Columbus, Cost-Ef Cruiser 23. Columbus, Crimes copter 24. Columbus, Crimes copter 25. Columbus, in Ser Helico 26. Lansing, Histor Fourth

Tal	ble
-----	-----

٠

1

I

P	a	g	e
---	---	---	---

13.	Answers to Question 27 by Sample Agencies According to Frequency 152
14.	Answers to Question 31 by Sample Agencies According to Frequency 154
15.	Major Missions, Average Mission Priority, and Modal Helicopter Effectiveness Rating by Mission for County Agencies by Population Groups.
16.	Major Missions, Average Mission Priority, and Modal Helicopter Effectiveness Rating by Mission for Local Agencies by Population Groups.
17.	Tucson Police Evaluation Factors 165
18.	Tucson Police Cost-Benefit Analysis Findings
19.	Detroit Police Evaluation of the Effect of Helicopter Patrol on Crime
20.	Detroit Police Helicopter Program Cost-Effectiveness Evaluation
21.	Detroit Police Statement of Accomplish- ment of Helicopter Program
22.	Columbus, Ohio Police Comparison of Cost-Effectiveness of Helicopters and Cruisers
23.	Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Change in Crimes Reported After Use of Heli- copter Patrols in Zone 1
24.	Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Change in Crimes Reported After Use of Heli- copter Patrols in Zone 2
25.	Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Changes in Serious Crime After Use of Helicopter Patrols in Zones 1 and 2 176
26.	Lansing, Michigan Police Five Year History of Part I Crimes for Third, Fourth, and First Quarters

17. Los Angeles Repressib and Non-H Between

<u>;the</u>

B. Los Angeles Helicopte as to Pro

H. Ratings of Helicopte Question

Ì

Table						Page
27.	Los Angeles Police Comparison of Repressible Crime in Helicopter and Non-Helicopter Patrol Areas Between 1973 and 1974	•	•	•	•	183
28.	Los Angeles Police Report of Special Helicopter Investigative Flights as to Productivity	•	•	•	•	184
A-1.	Ratings of Mission Priority and Helicopter Effectiveness, Question 11	•	•	•	•	231

I.

1

.

The purp: um of those met mly on the beliirect effect on ations. The st Hearchers who ad theories. The stud ist those metho Hage police a to structure co " higher educat Because telated to spee : <sup>iastest</sup> of all : Pertine: <sup>of visibility</sup> a tions will be  $\pi$ <sup>iata base</sup> exist <sup>t evaluation a</sup>

• • • •

### INTRODUCTION

### Purpose and Scope of Study

The purpose of this study is to provide a description of those methods and theories of police patrol which rely on the belief that visibility and mobility have a direct effect on crime by deterring or preventing criminal actions. The study is intended to provide useful data to researchers who may wish to test and evaluate these methods and theories.

The study also proposes to describe the influence that those methods and theories exert on the persons who manage police agencies and train policemen as well as those who structure curricula and teach criminal justice courses in higher education.

Because the theory of visibility and mobility is related to speed of movement, the study will focus on the fastest of all police patrol vehicles, the helicopter.

Pertinent information concerning the police theories of visibility and mobility will be discussed and examinations will be made in an effort to determine whether some data base exists which might be the foundation for research in evaluation and testing of those theories.

The purpe

reffort to gene

researchers.

This stu

mion pertainin

way relate to c

the scarcity of

methods to highe

maily based on

te questionnair

between author a

The purpose of the study might then be restated as an effort to generate some usable hypotheses for future researchers.

## Limitations of the Study

This study is limited by the narrow scope of information pertaining to police service evaluations insofar as they relate to crime deterrence and prevention along with the scarcity of material which relates police theories and methods to higher education programs. The thesis is generally based on all such material that was uncovered and the questionnaire results lack any direct personal contact between author and respondents except by mail.

THE '

In orde

or methods it w

۵.

the history of

Massible to fina

msibility and m

tence and preven

The fun

are generally P

sions of line a

The lin

<sup>irectly</sup> bearir

<sup>as</sup> patrol, inve

The st

<sup>services</sup> like

tory work, and

lv. A. Brocklyn: Fou A. C. Germann, <u>tereduction</u> T teid: Chas. C

## CHAPTER I

## THE THEORETICAL SETTING OF THE STUDY

OF POLICE PATROL

In order to properly explore any police theories or methods it will be useful to observe at least part of the history of that profession. In this setting it may be possible to find the basis of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention.

The functional programs of most police organizations are generally patterned after the military with basic divisions of line and staff.

The line division is charged with the duties most directly bearing on public safety and law-enforcement such as patrol, investigation, and traffic control.

The staff function is expected to provide support services like personnel, record keeping, training, laboratory work, and educational programs.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup>V. A. Leonard, Police Organization and Management (Brooklyn: Foundation Press, Inc., 1951), p. 83. See also A. C. Germann, Frank D. Day, and Robert R. J. Gallati, Introduction To Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice (Springfield: Chas. C. Thomas, 1969), pp. 144-47.

Agreat ĉ 'street" function beckground and hi miorms, patrol. iew, are traditi ziare consider-The sele the recycling of iepartment's own inition that incred concepts However, viewed in the 1: of research and controlling crin tient or even t impartments. Scant r ional methods for a closer lo determine wheth of protecting t <sup>incidents.</sup> The pat of deterrence of This theory po: Comit a crimi:

A great deal of the procedure used in the line, or "street" function of police agencies is derived from a background and history of tradition. Such concepts as uniforms, patrols, visibility, and weaponry, to name but a few, are traditionally deemed to be part of the "right" way and are considered necessary, proper, and most efficient.

The selection and training of recruits, as well as the recycling of experiential knowledge back into any department's own educational system, is based on the foundation that proficiency must be built around these time honored concepts of policing a community.

However, when these same ageless concepts are viewed in the light of the two very important facts of lack of research and lack of results in diminishing, or even controlling crime, they may not appear to be the most efficient or even the most useful methods available to police departments.

Scant research has been done on any of these traditional methods of police functioning. There is a real need for a closer look at such police practices as patrol, to determine whether or not this is the most efficient method of protecting the public from certain types of criminal incidents.

The patrol function is largely based on the theory of deterrence of crime through visibility and mobility. This theory posits that a person will be less inclined to commit a criminal act in the "presence" of police.

4

)

Mitionally, the mil, through mol is prevent the perpetrator. With the :fficer is able milly than on maibility and t "gresence." Fol mility, this s may in the pol: ærtain types ci Since, meater the are the use of heli area coverag the more visit <sup>telationship</sup> b∈ <sup>tate</sup> in the cor Interes <sup>20 not</sup> initiat( that give rise tat, as a res <sup>kerica</sup> have a 2 Presi Presi Presi Presi Presi Presi Presi Presi Presi

Additionally, the theory holds that a patrolling officer will, through mobility, come upon crimes in progress and thus prevent the completion of the crime or arrest the perpetrator.

With the use of the speed of the motor car the officer is able to cover a far greater area much more rapidly than on foot and to provide a considerably increased visibility and thus increase the appearance of police "presence." Following the theory of visibility and mobility, this should indicate a greatly increased efficiency in the police mission of protecting the public from certain types of criminal incidents.

Since, theoretically, the faster the patrol and the greater the area covered, the more efficiency that evolves, the use of helicopters in patrol functions ought to enable an area coverage far greater than ever before and provide much more visibility, if it is true that there is some relationship between visibility, mobility, and the crime rate in the community.

Interestingly, one study observes that the police do not initiate, and cannot remove, the human conditions that give rise to and stimulate crime, and this study says that, as a result of this, the police departments of America have a limited ability to act against crime.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup>President's Commission on Law Enforcement, Task Force on the Police (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1967), p. 1.

Mevertheless, th looking towards me. And, be: ments are able t vital for the pa seek solutions. plice communit; mich are based re proven as ca forime. In orde; be necessary for engage in resear evaluation of a ≇thods and the Area Therefo 1. Ret theory that rel <sup>to crime</sup> deter: <sup>bow the</sup> theory <sup>consideration</sup> <sup>beginning</sup> of a <sup>for fut</sup>ure use

Nevertheless, the communities that employ them insist on looking towards the police for a solution of the problem of crime.

And, because of the expectation that police departments are able to solve the problem of crime, it becomes vital for the practitioners in law enforcement to actively seek solutions. It becomes a constant priority of the police community to provide some public safety services which are based on scientifically tested procedures which are proven as capable of providing deterrence or prevention of crime.

In order to accomplish this priority mission it will be necessary for the practitioners of criminal justice to engage in research geared to provide scientific testing and evaluation of all of those areas of the profession where the methods and theories are as yet unproven in value.

## Areas for Study Concerning the Theory of Visibility and Mobility

Therefore, this study will:

1. Review the historical background of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention and attempt to determine how the theory began. This is important to any further consideration of the theory in its present state since the beginning of a theory provides the philosophical setting for future use.

6

1

2. Probe effort to discove that the theory h se. The literat tener the theor urrugh "common s plice generatio: metition. 3. Exam wlice department teory to search Elon. It is of  $\pi$ subility and  $\pi$ tetce and prever malized that the <sup>of the</sup> police tr Utriculum of ci His In the tom crime the <sup>system</sup> of mutua <sup>citizens</sup> were r <sup>actions</sup>. It wa <sup>iten</sup> a crime ha Escreant like
2. Probe the literature of law enforcement in an effort to discover whether any evidence exists to indicate that the theory has been subjected to scientific testing in use. The literature should provide some insight into whether the theory has been tested or granted acceptance through "common sense" value systems and passed on from one police generation to another to become traditional through repetition.

3. Examine some of the methods being used by police departments to evaluate programs founded on this theory to search for a data base for future test and evaluation.

It is of added importance that the relationship of visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention be tested and evaluated when it is realized that the theory becomes a part of the curriculum of the police training school and also becomes part of the curriculum of criminal justice programs in higher education.

#### Historical Background of the Theory

In the early English history of community protection from crime the monarch Alfred the Great (870-901) began the system of mutual group obligation, where all the local citizens were responsible for his own and his neighbor's actions. It was everyone's duty to raise a "hue and cry" when a crime happened and round up citizens to pursue the miscreant like a baying pack. If the criminal escaped, all

7

1

1

the pursuers were was visited on te enertly, ten ti gups of "hundre 'reeve' of the sh muenry carrie. imanched out to : is, the shire a ts," the power a minals. During th Scommunity pro: itto use in the bischolders to <sup>20</sup> arrest perpe estle were appo manity at no <sup>21 as</sup> a result, Hie up of the a Hig deterior. isystem of reg. ttle more that 3J. Dan Diganizatic <sup>4</sup>Ibid. <sup>5</sup>Germar. P. 48-49.

the pursuers were fined by the Crown.<sup>3</sup> This responsibility was visited on ten family groups known as "tithings." Subsequently, ten tithings became a "hundred" and, in turn, groups of "hundreds" were formed into "shires." The "reeve" of the shire at first was expected to see that the citizenry carried out their "hue and cry" duties, but later branched out to take part in the pursuit.<sup>4</sup> From that day to this, the shire reeve, or sheriff, has had "posse comitatus," the power to enlist the aid of citizens to chase criminals.

During the reign of Edward I (1272-1307) the system of community protection known as the "Watch and Ward" came into use in the larger English cities. This system utilized householders to protect against fire, guard the city gates, and arrest perpetrators of any criminal offenses. These people were appointed from a rotation roster to serve the community at no pay. They were allowed to hire substitutes and as a result, the protection force of any given city was made up of the human dregs of the area.<sup>5</sup> The system eventually deteriorated; or improved, as the viewer beholds, to a system of regular, paid, night watchmen who seemingly did little more than roam the streets at night shouting the

<sup>3</sup>J. Daniel Devlin, <u>Police Procedure</u>, <u>Administration</u> <u>and Organization</u> (London: Butterworth and Co., 1966), p. 3. <sup>4</sup>Ibid.

Pp. 48-49.

time, the weathe t was or not. In 1748 vention of crime pid policemen, runers to move plans resulted : parol," an oute laters" the Bow stene of a criz. along continui imartment to a mility to resp theory is root Just p light and saw th ery for large tion and enor With the cities a: tevolution a tial wage s 6<sub>Pre</sub> 2.4. 7 Ge

2. 4.

time, the weather, and the fact that "All is well!" whether it was or not.<sup>6</sup>

In 1748 Henry Fielding designed a plan for the prevention of crime in England which suggested a need for well paid policemen, mobile highway patrol, and a force of runners to move swiftly to the scene of a crime. These plans resulted in the formation of an inner city "foot patrol," an outer "horse patrol" and the famous "Thief Takers" the Bow Street Runners, who responded swiftly to the scene of a crime.<sup>7</sup> It is notable that here was the germ of a long continuing theory that the ability of a police department to affect crime has a direct relationship to its abil ity to respond rapidly to the scene of a crime. This theory is rooted in the subject of this research.

Just past the mid-point of the eighteenth century, England saw the start of an industrial revolution. Machinery for large scale production was replacing manual operation and enormous industrial growth evolved.

With this growth came hordes of workers to swell the cities and create the first slum areas. This industrial revolution also created a whole new population, the industrial wage slave and dependents, living in virtual poverty

P. 4. <sup>6</sup>President's Commission, <u>Task Force on the Police</u>,

P. 4. <sup>7</sup>Germann, <u>Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice</u>,

ad unable to ( ence. The ma nties than w tering pover era of crime delinquency. meakers en: Eve pais litera Eigers not year and p areas of t Y. were usin burglars. the citi. eradicat te Pera offer.se is nota of the taie. bund,  and unable to escape from the tangle of obligatory subservience.

The magnet of industry drew more people into the cities than were readily absorbed and this brought about a teeming poverty where a quest for survival initiated a new era of crime and ushered in the first examples of juvenile delinquency. Crime increased at an incredible rate as law breakers engaged in every crime known to man at that time.

Every road was a working area for highwaymen, footpads literally covered city streets (they are called muggers now), bank robberies numbered in the hundreds per year and prostitutes were practicing their profession in all areas of the country.

Many citizens began carrying arms, and householders were using animal traps to protect their homes from burglars. Vigilante groups were formed and interestingly, the cities also began to try a new tack in the struggle to eradicate crime, a savage criminal law.<sup>8</sup> The severity of the penalty for law violations was increased until even the offense of picking pockets was punishable by death, but it is notable that at public hangings of pick-pockets, others of the brethren were mingling with the crowd plying their trade. The theory of using punishment as a deterrent was found wanting.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup>T. A. Critchley, <u>A History of Police in England</u> and Wales (London: Constable and Co., Ltd., 1967), pp. 32-34.

There wa concerning ways unting citizens merous police There was the M establishments, in commercial ( the West India the Parish Pol uside the par Watch and War these had any with, the put A la te failure Was the fact of action o Property. 1 ties facing the twenties HO British Ho 9, 9.54.

•

10 Condon: Rote 6. There was much discussion in England at this time concerning ways and means of facing the problem of protecting citizens from criminal actions. There were also numerous police groups besides the Bow Street Runners. There was the Merchant Police, a group hired by commercial establishments, including banks, to protect against theft in commercial establishments; the Marine Police, hired by the West India merchants to protect the docks and ships; the Parish Police, hired by parishioners for protection inside the parish boundaries, and the virtually useless Watch and Ward, which was still in existence.<sup>9</sup> But none of these had any official responsibility to, or communication with, the public at large.

A later police commission found that the reason for the failure of the police systems in existence at that time was the fact that "no scheme could reconcile the freedom of action of individuals with the security of persons and property."<sup>10</sup> And, it might be added, one of the difficulties facing the citizens of America in the latter part of the twentieth century arises because of the same reason.

However, in the early 1820s Sir Robert Peel, British Home Secretary, made a very significant observation

<sup>9</sup>Germann, Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice, p. 54.

<sup>10</sup>Royal Commission on the Police, Final Report (London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1962), p. 10, note 6.

that, altho: plice metho plicing co a result of through the Folice In an Sir metals of c mis day. l. Ast 2. Gove 3. Deve need 4. Cent 5. Secu 6. Prož This first s stoups to we expected, p] \*10 created after their even now. I in combattin  $11_{
m Ib}$ 12 <sup>99. 55-56</sup>.

•

.•

that, although the police could not eliminate crime, poor police methods could contribute to social disorder and good policing could have an impact on the control of crime. As a result of his beliefs, Sir Robert introduced and guided through the English legislature "An Act for Improving the Police In and Near the Metropolis."<sup>11</sup>

Sir Robert's police plan provided for some fundamentals of community policing that are still in effect to this day. These included:

- 1. A stable, efficient, quasi-military force
- 2. Government control of police
- Development of police strength by time and area needs (records)
- 4. Central headquarters
- 5. Securing and training of proper personnel

6. Probation periods for new policemen<sup>12</sup>

This first force of one thousand men were the first police groups to wear a regular uniform. They were, as might be expected, placed under the control of the Home Secretary who created them, and, in fact eventually came to be known, after their founder, as "Bobbies," which they are called even now. This police force proved tremendously successful in combatting crime, was followed by requests from rural

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup>Ibid., p. 16, note 6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup>Germann, Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice, pp. 55-56.

areas for like hero in Sir Rol Ameri minually the ele means o then in their protection w anight "Wa mars later evildoers ( "Match" Wa the city, Were force F adivarce followed the legis througho Erst po Cincinne With Or se seer policir J XIJI

----

areas for like agencies, and in ten years created a national hero in Sir Robert Peel.

# The Traditional Passing of the Theory to America

America followed the mother country through virtually the same paths on the way to selecting some workable means of protecting people from those who would harm them in their daily lives. The first attempt at citizen protection was in 1636 in Boston, where the citizens formed a night "Watch" which had its counterpart in New York two years later with the added innovation of rattles, to warn evildoers that the "Watch" was near. In this situation, the "Watch" was made up, as in England, of the human dregs of the city, and was even used as a punishment when town drunks were forced to serve on the "Watch."

The first daytime paid police were created by ordinance in Philadelphia in 1833 and these were eventually followed by Boston in 1838 and by New York in 1844, where the legislature provided funds for municipal forces throughout the state. In 1845 New York City got their first police organization, and then Chicago, New Orleans, Cincinnati, Baltimore, Newark, and Providence followed suit with organized city police departments. This probably can be seen as the beginning of the present day method of policing communities, when it is noted that in 1856, New York City adopted full uniforms, which led to the adoption

of rea
create
Was el
promot
printi
In som
#35 tr
in the
from c
1881,
ವೆಲ್ಲಾಕ್ಸ್ನ ನ ವೆಲ್ಲಾಕ್ಸ್ ನ
the pa
Civil
ncorp 1.corp
at the
traini
Police
2.
5. e <sup>0</sup>

of regular uniforms for police forces virtually everywhere in America.

It is interesting to note that the early days of policing saw many evils caused by the spoils system which created a new department of police every time a new mayor was elected. The members of the new group won special promotions, granted enforcement favors and helped in political battles against opponents of the administration.<sup>13</sup> In some instances, the method of electing police officials was tried, but only served to increase political chicancery in the departments where it was used. The road to freedom from complete political servitude began to appear after 1881, when a dissatisfied office seeker assassinated President James Garfield. The reaction to this affair led to the passing of the Pendleton Act in 1883, which extended Civil Service to federal employees and eventually was incorporated in most of the governmental positions.<sup>14</sup>

Another improvement to appear on the police horizon at the turn of the nineteenth century was the advent of the training school to replace the system of having a recruit policeman learn his job duties and how to carry them out from whichever older officer he happened to be near while

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup>Bruce Smith, Sr., Police Systems in the United States (2nd ed.; New York: Harper and Bros., 1960), pp. 105-6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup>Germann, <u>Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice</u>, p. 60.

tew on th inever, training recruit Lecessar complex the Miss Azericar the enfo laws.16 reveals icgged concern stone o Selse"

J

k.owled

Was bas

mactic

liew Yo

vacy.11

new on the force.<sup>15</sup> Not until the 1940s and even later, however, did most police departments establish permanent training schools intended for the purpose of preparing a recruit to be a proper law enforcement officer.

Training a police officer to do his job properly, necessarily involves preparing the officer to do a very complex job. As early as the third decade of this century the Missouri Crime Commission reported that in the ordinary American city an officer was expected to be responsible for the enforcement of thirty thousand federal, state, or local laws.<sup>16</sup> But the history of the profession in America reveals no new methods or theories and demonstrates a dogged determination to cling to tradition in the beliefs concerning visibility and mobility in patrol as the keystone of crime deterrence and prevention. The "common sense" philosophy prevailed and the fact that the theory was based on untested presumptions apparently went unnoticed by trainer and teacher alike.

## Significance of the Study

One notable commission, highly staffed with many knowledgeable experts in all fields, including a few in law

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup>Elmer D. Graper, American Police Administration (New York: MacMillan Co., 1921), pp. 109-10.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>16</sup>Preston William Slosson, <u>The Great Crusade and</u> After, Vol. XII of <u>A History of American Life</u>, ed. by Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., and Dixon R. Fox (New York: MacMillan Co., 1931), p. 102.

enforcement rany depar technology are on the that remai ofjustice a truly pr shown, how mre ofte fashioned A well know describir point to particula tade of t and polic lets for suggesti: Public c Laive, O individu Act Visi P. 7. p. 63.

enforcement, has arrived at the conclusion that although many departments are reorganizing and modernizing in use of technology and improved techniques and other departments are on the threshold of doing so, it is the departments that remain static which cause a burden on the machinery of justice, and are detrimental to the process of achieving a truly professional police service.<sup>17</sup> It remains to be shown, however, whether the failure to control crime occurs more often in sophisticated departments than in old fashioned ones.

Additionally, it should probably be noticed that a well known and widely used police education text, in describing some of the negative aspects of police service, point to certain problem causes. Two of these, in particular, bear some scrutiny. In the first, mention is made of the fact that prohibition era habits of the public and police of the era caused some of the present day problems for public and police today.<sup>18</sup> If the authors are suggesting that prohibition created either an apathetic public or a dishonest police system they are either triply naive, or assume their readers will be. Honesty is owned individually as the result of one's own value systems and not visited from era to era by legal systems.

<sup>18</sup>Germann, <u>Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice</u>, p. 63.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup>President's Commission on Law Enforcement, <u>Police</u>, p. 7.

Secondly, the same authors note damages done to law enforcement during 1941-1945 when departments accepted the "scrapings of the manpower barrel" and gave poorly qualified individuals civil service tenure.<sup>19</sup> It makes one wonder where the authors got such data, if it is data, and if they have ever checked to see source of recruitment in the many personnel problems that are happening today and which include young officers involved in robbery, rape, murder, and narcotics. Or perhaps one might view the further statement of the same authors that depression recruiting (1929-1941) somehow brought fine young people into police work, who were able to withstand the temptations of prohibition.<sup>20</sup> Factually, it is probably one of the existing educational frustrations that even in a fine text book on policing, such unempirical generalizing happens, apparently as a result of the authors following traditional belief systems.

There are, in the United States today, over 40,000 police agencies of one sort or another employing more than 400,000 people. The vast majority of these are local police departments, most of them small agencies in towns and villages. There are about 50 federal agencies, 200 state level groups, 3,700 city, and 3,100 county police

> <sup>19</sup>Ibid. <sup>20</sup>Ibid.

agencies. foremost process C each offi comparati P :f rights encompass that dece brings ab cludes, j Some fede in a few problem c inter-age level. <sup>as o</sup>ne o an impor police p ost any relation crize. of the F ary court

4

<sup>Lational</sup>

agencies. Thus we are still faced today with one of the foremost problems of the community of old in that the process of enforcing the law is extremely decentralized and each officer's authority is usually confined to a single, comparatively small jurisdiction.

And while the delicate balance between protection of rights and protection of people rules against any allencompassing and overriding police authority, it is a fact that decentralization creates barriers between agencies, brings about a difficult style of communication and precludes, in many instances, inter-agency aid and cooperation. Some federal and state agencies have helped in coordination in a few cases but generally fragmentation exists. The problem of decentralization must be confronted by greater inter-agency cooperation and communication at the local level.

In the main, more police manpower is generally cited as one of the foremost needs in communities where crime is an important factor of daily living. And, generally, police personnel has continued to increase in numbers without any certainty as to whether or not there is a positive relationship between the number of police and the amount of crime. As a result, no one knows, or has any real indicator of the per-capita need for police enforcement personnel in any community.

In the five year period from 1969 through 1974 the national average of police personnel per 1000 inhabitants

18

L

rose from cr more i police em Ρ ni parce. Tsually, ( visible b the public B prishnen would see: also, in a We note th Population of about ! cfferses -D Property 17 percen Siary 53 2 Mashingt P. 221. 2 P. 54. 2

a,

Ł

rose from 2.2 to 2.5. Nationally, large cities of 250,000 or more inhabitants had, as a group, risen from 3.1 to 3.5 police employees per 1000 inhabitants.<sup>21</sup>

Presumably, increases in police manpower are part and parcel of specific attempts to prevent crime in America. Usually, during those periods when the rise of crime is more visible because of the phenomena of elections and campaigns, the public outcry is for more policemen and stiffer laws.

But, it is noted historically that the severity of punishment has little deterrent effect on crime.<sup>22</sup> And it would seem that the addition of more police personnel is also, in and of itself, a failure at controlling crime when we note that in the same period, 1969 through 1974, the population rose from 201,385,000 to 211,392,000, an increase of about 5 percent while crime climbed from 7,366,900 offenses to 10,192,000, 38.3 percent higher.<sup>23</sup>

During this five year period, crimes against property rose 37 percent, murder climbed 40 percent, assault 47 percent, rape 49 percent, robbery 48 percent, and burglary 53 percent. Included in the robbery category are

<sup>21</sup>Clarence Kelley, <u>Crime in the United States</u> (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1974), p. 221.

<sup>22</sup>Germann, <u>Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice</u>, p. 54.

<sup>23</sup>Kelley, Crime in the United States, p. 55.

arge rises in

::commercial

Murder

meanly impact

so frequently

aquaintances.

4

dich are supp

frequent polic

moment and  $\pi \phi$ 

presence of a p

moving the op

iscreant, by

wil fail.<sup>25</sup>

This g

mipresent po

stojects such ;

tions while pa

wility.

The si

Wery serious p

<sup>in jeopardy</sup> be <sup>based on</sup> untes

<sup>lecus.</sup> It is

24 Ibi

25 The Association p large rises in street robbery, chain store robbery, robbery of commercial houses, and bank robberies.<sup>24</sup>

Murder is not one of the crimes which is generally greatly impacted by police patrol methods since the crime so frequently occurs indoors and between relatives or acquaintances. It is such crimes as robbery and burglary which are supposedly subject to suppression by proper and frequent police patrol. Many police administrators, both ancient and modern, as will be shown, contended that the presence of a police officer could deter crime by first removing the opportunity and second by convincing the miscreant, by the same presence, that any attempt at crime will fail.<sup>25</sup>

This gives rise to the theory of visibility, the omnipresent policeman who, while really not omnipresent, projects such an image by appearing in many different locations while patrolling, through the use of speed in mobility.

The significance of the study then, lies in the very serious possibility that the public safety may well be in jeopardy because the police efforts against crime are based on untested assumptions which may be totally erroneous. It is vital, therefore to:

<sup>25</sup>These theories are advanced by Vollmer, Wilson, Chapman, Brostron, Smith, and International City Managers Association plus many others whose works are reviewed later.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>24</sup>Ibid., pp. 11-55.

	3 ***
	a.1 11 -
	the pre
	their r
	tionshi
	and edu
	fiture
	event t
	false,
	Zethods
	inter et
	elin
	staffs.
	are cha
	of the
	Provide
	schnel
	Systers
	in the
	sion of
	· .

1. Locate these assumptions, identify their origins and trace their use and maintenance in police service to the present time.

2. Describe certain police methods and theories, their reliance on these untested assumptions and the relationship of this reliance to police procedure, training, and education.

3. Use this information to point the direction of future test and evaluation of these assumptions and, in the event that test and evaluation prove the assumptions are false, to aid in the development of new theories and methods of crime deterrence and prevention.

### Goal of the Study

And so, while the manpower needs remain largely undefined, the management of police departments seek ways to improve the performance and ability of their present staffs.

The attempts to improve the present staff capability are channeled in two directions; one toward the refinement of the recruiting, training, and education processes to provide departments with the finest and best educated personnel available and one toward improving the physical systems and methods to arrive at the most efficient point in the prevention and detection of crime and the apprehension of criminals.

	visibil
	prevent
	+12 +12
	1
	to prov
	ground,
	evidenc
	rd era
	theory
	deterre
	Polici-
	PICha -
	ti a
	-+on a:
	Ies .
	Polici
	Percep
	lethod
	cernin
	leterr
	- •

ł

Therefore, this study will deal with the theory of visibility and mobility which concern the deterrence and prevention of crime and the apprehension of criminals, and the theory's relationship to the training and education processes in criminal justice programs. The study will aim to provide a complete description of the theory's background, origins, and present status and to probe for evidence of a data base to provide material for future test and evaluation.

#### Design of the Study

This study, then, will trace the history of the theory of visibility and mobility as related to crime deterrence and prevention and discuss the philosophy of policing that arose out of the history of the theory.

The literature of the profession will be used as a probe instrument for the dual purpose of determining the present status of this theory in police training and education and to try to locate any testing or evaluation procedures in regard to the theory.

In addition, some probing of the profession of policing will be conducted by questionnaire to ascertain perceptions of the practitioners and to get a look at the methods of evaluation now in use or under discussion concerning the theory of visibility and mobility.

The linking of visibility and mobility to crime deterrence and prevention necessarily implies that speedier

accility pro greater cris fore, the st plice patr concerning for use in Th patrol as not be tes actual fie tific guid areas. T basic ste descripti 5 the value attempt It is ho

Ą

<sup>theses</sup> a

and pr This c mobility provides increased visibility and, of course, greater crime deterrence and prevention capability. Therefore, the study will focus on the fastest of all forms of police patrol mobility, the helicopter. All available data concerning these vehicles will be presented in this study for use in future evaluation.

## Limitations of the Study

The theory of visibility and mobility in police patrol as effective in deterring or preventing crime will not be tested or evaluated in this study. That must await actual field test conditions to be conducted under scientific guidelines over a goodly period of time in several areas. This study will only be concerned with the first basic step in research leading to test, a full and accurate description of the process in question.

Therefore, this study will make no judgements as to the value of the theory but will concern itself with an attempt to provide full information for future researchers. It is hoped that the study will provide some usable hypotheses and some practical recommendations for the utilization of the data obtained in the study.

#### Summary

Chapter I has identified the setting of the study and provides a view of the philosophy of police patrol. This chapter details the birth of the theory which contends

tat visib preventing and was tr of the cri Th becare app increasing the theory Εv education concern an pod deal education mevaluate carried th C} <sup>examining</sup> lent. The were the a

-

examined (

present da

•

that visibility and mobility are effective in deterring and preventing crime and notes that the theory began in England and was transported to the American colonies to become part of the criminal justice program in the United States.

This chapter also points out that, although it became apparent that crime and police personnel were both increasing far more rapidly than the nation's population, the theory was retained unscathed.

Even though concerns about police training and education began to surface there is no indication of any concern among trainers or educators of the police that a good deal of the subject matter of police training and education might be based on a theory that was untested and unevaluated and arose from "common sense" values to be carried through the profession by tradition.

Chapter II probes further into this theory by examining the literature of the profession of law enforcement. The statements, writings, and teachings of those who were the administrators, trainers, and educators are examined to trace the philosophy of the theory to its present day status.

I			
.nere is			
lew pher			
philoso			
be glea			
Police			
on cri			
1404			
20 arres			
tete			
Sat:			
Rot			
es			
•			
=			

#### CHAPTER II

#### REVIEW OF THE LITERATURE

In this chapter the literature of law enforcement will be used as one of the probe instruments of the study. There is a scarcity of information concerning the relatively new phenomenon of law enforcement and the search for the philosophy of such a theory as visibility and mobility must be gleaned from what literature is available.

Information about the testing and evaluation of police patrol methods and theories in relation to any effect on crime is virtually non-existent. The review of the literature in this chapter will demonstrate this lack of information.

It will be noted that Chapter II provides frequent references to the lack of a proven method of testing police patrol methods and theories.

Those methods of testing and evaluation which are noted in the literature are geared to demonstrate the effectiveness of one police program or another in providing "work" statistics. These are often a compilation of calls for service, numbers of persons contacted, paper
accumulated, it is undoubt agency, these evaluation in mime deterret The l of patrol ver minesitating theories can changing the ormission of Here police admini police method in some insta Process has , Sinc is directly tion, it wil patrol serve acbility and <sup>relate</sup> high <sup>directly</sup> to <sup>are the</sup> fou accumulated, or locations and conditions observed. While it is undoubtedly important to report the functions of any agency, these reportages do not constitute testing or evaluation in relation to the effect of the function on crime deterrence or prevention.

The literature of policing describes the philosophy of patrol very positively in many instances and is often unhesitating in deciding that certain police methods and theories can actually, when used "effectively," result in changing the intention of a potential criminal from commission of a crime to honest endeavors.

Here in Chapter II can be seen the tendency of police administrators, trainers, and educators to pass police method and theory from hand to hand, almost verbatim in some instances, without questioning whether or not the process has ever been tested or evaluated.

### Views of the Rationale of Patrol

Since the use of the helicopter in police service is directly related to the police mission of crime prevention, it will be useful to discuss those theories of police patrol service relating to the use of conveyances to provide mobility and, even further, to discuss those theories which relate high visibility and speed in mobility of patrol directly to crime deterrence and prevention. These theories are the foundation of the training and education curricula of police acad parrol practic From t evidence of th literature str adeterrent to a definition dthat it is any mime in a par are on the job troublemakers profitable or The that: "Effor tizes when, Decur."2 Whi sider as gu Wilce adm: Th <sup>relates</sup> hi Patrol" by 1 Screuce ( P. 52

.

of police academies and criminal justice schools regarding patrol practices.

From the earliest times in police history there is evidence of the use of various forms of patrol. Much of the literature stresses the importance of "effective patrol" as a deterrent to crime. However, there is nowhere to be found a definition of "effective patrol" other than an assumption that it is any patrol method which controls or prevents crime in a particular area. Williams (1967) says, "If you are on the job where and when you are most needed, the troublemakers and crooks will decide that your beat is not a profitable one in which they can operate."<sup>1</sup>

The President's Commission on Law Enforcement noted that: "Efforts must be made to schedule police patrol at the times when, and the places where, crimes are most likely to occur."<sup>2</sup>

While these principles are certainly worthy to consider as guidelines, they do leave much to the ability of a police administrator as a seer of future events.

There is a considerable body of literature which relates high visibility and rapid mobility to "effective patrol" but there are few studies which offer evidence of a

<sup>2</sup>President's Commission, <u>Crime in Free Society</u>, p. 52.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup>E. W. Williams, <u>Modern Law Enforcement and Police</u> Science (Springfield, Ill.: Chas. C. Thomas, 1967), p. 30.

—

relationsh		
•effective		
even in Ca		
those who		
shift or		
any, stat		
tive pat		
profess		
Iesista		
part of		
that p		
safety		
that w		
"Char		
₩ere		
できた。		
<i>9</i> ]]		
C:		
2:		

relationship between the actual deterrence of crime and "effective patrol" except as to areas of saturation. And even in cases of deterrence through saturation, there are those who view such efforts as resulting only in a temporary shift or displacement of crime.<sup>3</sup> History records little, if any, statistical documentation of what constitutes "effective patrol."

It is interesting to observe that the idea of paid professional police was still meeting with a great deal of resistance in the English speaking world during the latter part of the eighteenth century.<sup>4</sup> The inherent suspicion that policing would go beyond the simple concern for public safety and abridge individual freedom persisted in lands that were truly inundated with crime.

Nevertheless, the watchmen on patrol, such as the "Charlies," named after King Charles II, in whose reign they were initiated, were paid, although at a scandalously low figure. These watchmen were mostly drunks or buffoons who patrolled about the town announcing the time and weather to all honest citizens and their impending arrival to the

<sup>4</sup>T. A. Critchley, p. 35. Supra Chapter I, Note 8.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup>John G. Kinser, "Crime Displacement," <u>The Police</u> <u>Chief</u> 41 (August 1974):66-67. Also note American Bar Association Project on Standards for Criminal Justice, "Standards Relating to the Urban Police Function" (Tentative Draft, 1972), p. 56.

1 ambreakers. test police pr This s theory of patr was manned by seemed to ler. many citizens An ea: (1920) visite study police opines: Conceivab tious, no Highway r break in restraine maintain our city commissio Fosd placed on the <sup>5</sup>Ibi 6<sub>Ib:</sub> 7 Ra Nork: The C Netrican Ba Netrican Ba Strine in the Cificer at Cificer at Civiously in Sor Policin

lawbreakers.<sup>5</sup> Still, this system probably provided the best police protection in England at that time.

This system also provides early evidence of the theory of patrol and visibility, and even though the watch was manned by the less than excellent, its very regularity seemed to lend a certain stability to the community which many citizens of the time viewed as beneficial.<sup>6</sup>

## Speed in Mobility Brings More Visibility

An early police historian, Raymond B. Fosdick (1920) visited seventy-two cities in the United States to study police systems. In discussing the patrolman, Fosdick opines:

Conceivably, therefore, if he is alert and conscientious, no crimes will be committed in his vicinity. Highway robbers will not operate, burglars will not break in from the street, and pickpockets will be restrained from activity. If it were possible to maintain enough policemen continuously to cover all our city blocks we could be guaranteed against the commission of crime in our streets.<sup>7</sup>

Fosdick reports that the Detroit police department placed on the street over 150 Fords with one officer driver

<sup>5</sup>Ibid.

<sup>6</sup>Ibid.

<sup>7</sup>Raymond B. Fosdick, <u>American Police Systems</u> (New York: The Century Co., 1920), p. 354. But also see American Bar Association, "Urban Police Function," p. 56. "It has never been doubted that the presence of a police officer at any given spot will deter the commission of a crime in the immediate view of the officer. But it is obviously not economically feasible to consider such a plan for policing. . . ."

to replace 1

mobility fel

maths. Fos

that, becaus

to do the wo

Alor

Detroit, Wil

Detroit was

tave a munic

sively in po

crize prever

to the motor

What stem the formidal criminal army whi by a con and prej and prej acts as effect : radio in stickup ever be percent incline honest

8<sub>1b</sub>

9 Internation Folice Work 1930), pp. ( to replace foot patrolman. As a result of the new speedy mobility felony complaints were reduced the following two months. Fosdick tells of a Detroit official who stated that, because of this speed in mobility, two men were able to do the work that formerly required five officers.<sup>8</sup>

Along the same lines, the police commissioner of Detroit, William P. Rutledge, in a 1929 speech, noted that Detroit was the first police department in the nation to have a municipally owned police radio station used exclusively in police work. Rutledge foresaw a bright future in crime prevention with the addition of radio communication to the motor car's speedy capability:

What is the most effective means we can employ to stem the tide of lawlessness? What weapon is the most formidable with which to battle the unseen army of criminals which constitutes the vicious minority--an army which acts as one man because it is bound together by a common desire to make a living by defying the law and preying upon society?

I am convinced that in police radio we have found the weapon. The psychological effect of quick capture acts as a powerful deterrent to crime. The actual effect is being recorded daily on the log of our police radio in Detroit. We are catching and convicting more stickup men, robbers and other vicious criminals, than ever before. Prosecutions have increased fifty-four percent. All of which is discouraging the criminally inclined parasite, who will soon find it best to adopt honest employment as his means of livelihood.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup>Proceedings of the 1929 Annual Convention of the International Association of Chiefs of Police, "Radio in Police Work," William P. Rutledge (New York: Arno Press, 1930), pp. 68-71.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup>Ibid., pp. 311-13.

Thi visible, hi crize was s became the Au aivocates patrol to int the co tions v plice se speed in about mo ۰. era eff: just cro spe a f S₩3 Chapma. Chas.

Gover:

This view of the deterrent effect of a highly visible, highly mobile patrol becoming the total nemesis of crime was shared by many able police administrators. It became the creed of police work.

August Vollmer, one of the most respected of early advocates of police professionalism said:

. . . the mere sight of uniformed patrolmen diligently patrolling their beats, is sufficient in many instances to intimidate the professional crook and deter some of the community's weaker members from committing infractions of the law.10

Vollmer was deeply committed to the improvement of police service and was one of the earliest advocates of speed in mobility of patrol. He was extremely enthusiastic about motorized patrol:

. . . with the advent of the radio equipped car a new era has come. . . Districts of many square miles . . are now covered by the roving patrol car, fast, efficient, stealthy, having no regular beat to patrol, just as liable to be within 60 feet as 3 miles of the crook plying his trade--the very enigma of this specialized fellow who is coming to realize now that a few moments may bring them down about him like a swarm of bees--this lightning swift "angel of death."

<sup>10</sup>August Vollmer, "The Police Beat," Samuel G. Chapman, ed., <u>Police Patrol Practices</u> (Springfield, Ill.: Chas. C. Thomas, 1972), p. 315.

<sup>11</sup>National Commission on Law Observance and Enforcement, <u>Report No. 14</u>, The Police (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1930), pp. 90-98.

The speed in mo the literat value of pa Vo and ears o informatic the police 0 organizat the core Wilson sa desire to to do so the pres created hour an

-

MoGraw

These two principles of patrol, visibility and speed in mobility (or omnipresence) are repeated throughout the literature in a recurring theme as the proof of the value of patrol.

Vollmer also viewed the patrol system as the eyes and ears of the department executive and believed that the information discovered on regular patrol could be used by the police executive to formulate future plans.<sup>12</sup>

O. W. Wilson, another of the demi-gods of police organization characterized patrol as being as the base of the core of the police purpose of preventing criminal acts. Wilson says crime results from the co-existence of the desire to commit a crime and the belief that an opportunity to do so exists. Wilson sees the opportunity diminished by the presence of a police officer.<sup>13</sup>

Wilson notes that an impression of omnipresence is created by: ". . . frequent and conspicuous patrol at every hour and in all sections of the community."<sup>14</sup>

<sup>12</sup>Vollmer, <u>Police Patrol Practices</u>, p. 315.

<sup>13</sup>O. W. Wilson, <u>Police Administration</u> (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., 1950), pp. 80-85.

14<sub>Ibid</sub>.

#### \_\_\_\_

.

jeterren here, al created J this type of police overage Wilson sp patrolmar

•

trator, a

the descr

Ņ

mbile ca

Will, bes

<sup>a better</sup>

a result

mbile pa

of patrol

l Practices

Here again is a statement of the belief in the deterrent effect of a visible, patrolling policeman. But here, also, is added the requirement of high visibility created by a presence at all hours, everywhere. Obviously, this type of presence requires either a very large number of policemen, or a method of patrol which would assure coverage of large areas of the community rather quickly. Wilson specifically suggests speed in mobility.

Interestingly, O. W. Wilson also points out that the patrolman serves as the eyes and ears of the police administrator, a function noted by other police administrators in the description of the purposes of patrol.<sup>15</sup>

Wilson also notes that a patrol officer in an automobile can cover a far larger area than when on foot, and will, besides arriving at a given point much sooner, be in a better physical condition to take police action. And as a result of this increased mobility, Wilson finds the automobile patrol the least expensive and most effective method of patrol.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>15</sup>Ibid., p. 81. Also note Vollmer, <u>Police Patrol</u> Practices, p. 315.

<sup>16</sup>Ibid., p. 94.



.

patrol :

ordinand

and info

list be

larly w

<sup>says</sup>, d

existen

It does

be assu

್ರಾಗಾಂಗ

increas

the 189

Police ASSOCIA The International City Managers Association also sees the patrol function as the eyes and ears of the police administrator. The information gathered by the patrol force is depended upon heavily by the administrator for solutions to police problems.<sup>17</sup>

This manual views the patrol function as all encompassing and believes that if the patrol function were to be 100 percent effective there would be little or no need for specialized operating divisions.

This work also sees the principal duties of the patrol force as the prevention of violation of statutes and ordinances, the arrest of offenders, and to give aid, relief and information. In order to carry out these duties there must be active patrol of all streets in all areas, particularly where crime occurs frequently. Patrol, this volume says, diminishes the potential offender's belief in the existence of an opportunity to successfully violate the law. It does not, however, say why this is so.<sup>18</sup> It can probably be assumed that this view is based, as with others, on the "common sense" principle.

Richardson (1974) writes of the first mechanical increase in police mobility with the advent of bicycles in the 1890s. Commissioner Theodore Roosevelt of the New York

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup>International City Managers Association, <u>Municipal</u> <u>Police Administration</u> (Chicago: International Managers <u>Association, 1954), pp. 255-65.</u>

poli
pen.
with
incr
• <u></u> ==e
crisi
to ef
a Los
Where
Iade y
Richar
arrest
the of
hours,
arrival
of arre
cver ha
<sup>üse</sup> to r
States /
55. 117-

police department, created a bicycle squad of one hundred men. These machine mounted men were better able to deal with runaway horses, law breaking bicyclers and, because of increased mobility, could cover a larger patrol area in less time.

Richardson also reports that by 1910 the automobile flying squad was common; its purpose to rush policemen to crisis or crime points.<sup>19</sup>

Richardson observes that response time is critical to effective police performance. He cites the results of a Los Angeles study which tells of criminal arrests made where average response time was 4.1 minutes and no arrest made where the average response time was 6.3 minutes. Richardson also cites that more than one-third of all arrests were made within one-half hour of the commission of the offense and <u>almost half</u> of all arrests came within two hours after a crime had been done.<sup>20</sup>

While this data seems to indicate that speed in arrival at the crime scene is essential to the possibility of arrest, one notes, according to the same statistic, that over half of the arrests came after two hours had passed.

Richardson mentions that computer systems are now in use to monitor response time and tells of the Chicago Police

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup>James F. Richardson, <u>Urban Police in the United</u> <u>States</u> (Port Washington, N.Y.: Kennikat Press, 1974), pp. 117-18.

-\_ )epartm system called swift t scene w suscept that th recruit rention there i and obj miform tive cr communi policer

4

because

depart:

••••

<sup>potent</sup>i

orizes

(Spring

Department's splendid, new speed oriented communication system and New York's advanced communication time saver called Sprint. He cautions, however, that no matter how swift the response to the crime scene, the results at that scene would be dependent on other factors, which are not susceptible to improvement by mechanical means. He cites that the result at the scene may be most affected by recruiting, training, and management. Richardson does not mention research as a factor.<sup>21</sup>

Samuel G. Chapman (1964) says of patrol: ". . . there is no more effective machinery for achieving the goals and objectives of law enforcement than through the medium of uniformed patrol."<sup>22</sup>

Chapman also sees that the police must be an effective crime fighting machine to make the streets of the community safe. Since each citizen cannot have his own policeman, or even have one on each block of his city because of the prohibitive cost of such a large police department, Chapman proposes that the solution lies in: ". . . the adoption of a type of patrol that convinces potential offenders that they lack the opportunity to commit crimes successfully."<sup>23</sup>

<sup>21</sup>Ibid., pp. 117-20.

<sup>22</sup>Samuel G. Chapman, ed., Police Patrol Readings (Springfield: Chas C. Thomas, 1964), p. ix.

<sup>23</sup>Ibid., p. x.

С desire an feels, ho desire, v commit ti ligh ris 4, a police crimina vince t and a g that th to <u>thi</u> desire says, Brosti a cri: havir 00775 stri) ?rel teel Chapman reiterates, as do many police experts, that desire and opportunity are the concomitants of crime. He feels, however, that the presence of an officer only stifles desire, while effective patrol diminishes the opportunity to commit the crime and must convince the crime planner of the high risk of arrest.<sup>24</sup>

By inference, at least, Chapman is pointing out that a police officer cannot, by his mere presence, obliterate a criminal desire, but the police presence can serve to convince the criminal that there is a small chance of success and a great risk of arrest. It should be added, though, that this small chance and great risk are directly related to this time and place.

In this same work, Brostron (1964) states that desire plus opportunity equals crime. Each element, he says, is dangerous but action occurs when they are combined. Brostron believes that if either element can be controlled, a crime cannot occur, but he looks on law enforcement as having very slight effect on criminal desires other than to blunt or frustrate them. He says that the opportunity to commit a crime is the point at which an effective patrol strikes.

Brostron proposes that Cain could not have killed Abel had a third party restrained Cain. In fact, Brostron feels that the mere presence of the third party would have

37

<sup>24</sup>Ibid.

hađ this <u>cont</u> if i no c to E yet i per s gener figur failu work : Whose Painti Patrol lakes : instan speed j tion.26 "thief Patrol F

۹

had a sobering effect on Cain.<sup>25</sup> Again, it might be added, this might only be true so long as the restraint or presence continued.

It seems to be a truism, as cited by Brostron, that if it were possible to control either desire or opportunity, no crime would occur. It is also true that there seems to be no active research to indicate that any method has yet been discovered to control or curb criminal desires per se, or to control or even diminish criminal opportunity generally. A brief study of progressively rising crime figures year after year would seem to bear out this failure.

Brostron proposes that a department can do more work if the mobility is increased by adding men and cars, whose crime deterrent value, incidentally, is increased by painting the cars a conspicuous white. This added mobile patrol provides greater area coverage in less time and makes possible frequent passage of any given point, with instant radio communication. Again, high visibility and speed in mobility as the key ingredients of crime prevention.<sup>26</sup>

But Clift (1965) says that police are not just "thief takers." He sees the police as engaged in all phases

<sup>26</sup>Ibid., p. 78.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>25</sup>Curtis Brostron, "Strategy and Tactics," in <u>Police</u> <u>Patrol Readings</u>, ed. Samuel G. Chapman (Springfield: <u>Chas C. Thomas</u>, 1964), pp. 76-77.

٠

....

of public safety and feels that the most important duty is the preservation of peace. Patrol is for the purpose of giving general assistance to the public. The public, according to Clift, does not necessarily want the police to be constantly running "hither and yon" but just "to be there."<sup>27</sup> Thus the promotion of the theory of deterrence through high visibility.

McNamara (1969), writing in the introduction to a reprint of Graper's book on police administration, states that the problems and controversies are the same in the last half of the century as they were in the first half.

Graper was one of the earlier advocates of speed in mobility when he noted that a booth system, employing one officer in a booth with a phone, and one officer on patrol, could cut the arrival time, at certain locations from forty-five minutes to eight minutes.<sup>28</sup>

Leonard (1951) points out that patrol is the most important phase of police management and observes that special divisions are necessary only to the extent that patrol falls short of 100 percent efficiency.<sup>29</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup>Raymond E. Clift, <u>A Guide to Modern Police</u> <u>Thinking</u> (Cincinnati: The W. H. Anderson Co., 1965), p. 158.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>28</sup>John McNamara, in Introduction to Elmer Graper, American Police Administration (Montclair, New Jersey: Patterson Smith, 1969), Intro. p. iii.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup>Leonard, <u>Police Organization and Management</u>, p. 221. See also International City Managers Association, Municipal Police Administration, p. 255.

1
cent, inc
secondary
also poi
response
petrolli
forming
that wi
ziscond
g bers
a crim
patroj
Iron o
20
20 D
that
čisc
heli

Leonard holds that all other line units in a department, including traffic, detective, and the like, are secondary and collateral to the patrol function.<sup>30</sup> Leonard also points out that speed is important in increasing the response capability when answering calls for aid or when patrolling an area.<sup>31</sup>

Folley (1973) views the purpose of patrol as performing a distribution of police officers in such a manner that will eliminate or reduce the opportunity for citizen misconduct and increase the probability of apprehension if a person commits a crime. Folley cites these two items as a criminal's chief concern and says that where effective patrol minimizes his chances of success, he will refrain from committing a crime.

Folley points out that, in order to be effective, the patrol must minimize response time, and believes patrol must be motorized.<sup>32</sup>

Folley sees the frequent appearance of a police car as presenting an illusion of police saturation. He feels that the apparently obvious presence of police officers will discourage potential criminals. He notes the modern use of helicopters but sees these mainly as traffic controllers,

<sup>32</sup>Vern L. Folley, <u>American Law Enforcement</u> (Boston: Holbrook Press, 1973), pp. 108-9.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup>Ibid., p. 222.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup>Ibid., p. 261.

mercy wag patrol ca apprehen relation repress oiboll ourbi the cf highly crimi of ma Patro Pres

С ,

.

mercy wagons, area searchers, and as directors of ground patrol cars in felony chases.

Folley also relates speedy response directly to apprehension but does not furnish any data to explain the relationship.<sup>33</sup>

Caldwell (1972) proposes that to implement crime repression the patrol officer must deny the criminal the opportunity to commit crime, by creating an impression of omnipresence in his patrol district. Caldwell also repeats the oft made suggestion that the patrol officer ought to be highly visible in his uniform and patrol car to deter the criminal. He views that it is important to make up for lack of manpower or speed by strategically planned placement patrol personnel to provide rapid response.<sup>34</sup>

Caldwell's statement supports the view of the President's Commission (1967) which opined:

The object of patrol is to disperse policemen in a way that will eliminate or reduce the opportunity for misconduct and to increase the likelihood that a criminal will be apprehended while he is committing a crime or immediately thereafter. The strong likelihood of apprehension will presumably have a strong deterrent effect on potential criminals.35

<sup>35</sup>President's Commission, <u>Challenge of Crime</u>, p. 1.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup>Ibid., pp. 114-19. It is interesting to find that one who proposes speed in response and patrol sees no such use for helicopters.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>34</sup>Harry Caldwell, Basic Law Enforcement (Pacific Palisades, Cal.: Goodyear Publishing Co., 1972), pp. 31-45.

## Some Doubts About the Rationale

But Misner (1969) shows that policemen in large urban areas spend less than 30 percent of their working time dealing with crime or other enforcement duties. Misner reports:

Rather than patrolling on foot or on a bicycle, today's policeman has an automobile, even a helicopter. His basic tasks, however, are essentially what they were in 1910, and his increased mobility has reduced his casual, day to day informal involvement with members of the community. 36

And James Q. Wilson (1968) draws attention to the complete lack of a proven methodology for testing law enforcement proposals. Because of this failure Wilson believes we stand the hazard of turning a practical problem into an ideological argument. He notes that some are passionately choosing sides over whether the best method is to arm or disarm the police, to love or hate the courts, and to hire or fire prison guards. Wilson sees as a possibility that, because of emotional arousal over crime, we may dangerously oversell our ability to repress or lower crime rates. Wilson finds that, in order to secure from Congress enough funds for a program that <u>may</u> reduce auto theft by 5 percent, we may have to guarantee Congress and the people a 20 percent reduction in murders.<sup>37</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup>Gordon E. Misner, "Enforcement: Illusion of Security," The Nation 208 (April 1969):488-90.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup>James Q. Wilson, "Crime and Law Enforcement," Agenda for the Nation, ed. Kermt Gordon (Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institute, 1968), pp. 179-206.

for eva that t? police with ma paper c lems ar Frecess propose for com very fe service. the pro during , experime Would p: Negro, ; the nos: Personne Were moi <sup>felonies</sup> cent. A

.

# Suggestions for Testing or Measuring the Rationale

There have been, in recent years, some suggestions for evaluation of police programs but it will be noticed that the overwhelming majority of the plans for improving police production, and evaluating this improvement, deal with management problems and tend to revolve around the paper count and data processing procedures. Personnel problems are dealt with along with programs for streamlining the process of policing a community. Many new methods have been proposed and designed that make use of the latest technology for communication. Training method evaluations abound, but very few of the newest efforts at improving the police services are concerned with researching the basic tenets of the profession in relation to their impact on crime.

There was an interesting research test in New York during a four month period of 1954. The purpose of the experiment was to determine precisely what number of men would provide adequate policing in a busy New York precinct.

The Twenty-fifth precinct was peopled by White, Negro, and Puerto Rican citizenry and was considered one of the most lawless areas of the city. Basically, the police personnel assigned to the unit for the four month period were more than doubled.

Compared with the same four month period of 1953, felonies were reduced from 1102 to 488, a drop of 55.6 percent. All crime went from 1,757 down to 1,273 a loss of

	27.5	and
	from	568
	to 74	.5
	a "sa	itur
-	perso	nne
	repor	it s
	¥ere,	ti
	of ar	:y }
	areas	5.
	deter	re
	only	be
	in a	Va
	ever	, e
	to ti	τγ I
	test	ing
	adītī.	lis
	Polic	зе ,
	tial	of
	to si	100
	cal :	)ro
		_
	Sative	è].
	25.	342.
27.5 and the number of cases cleared by arrest increased from 568 to 948. The clearance rate rose from 32.3 percent to 74.5 percent.

The writer of this report insisted that it was not a "saturation" experiment, but whatever the semantics, the personnel was doubled, and true, the statistics were, as the report said "dramatic."<sup>38</sup>

However dramatic the results of this experiment were, they were also incomplete since there was no follow-up of any kind and no study of the crime statistics in adjacent areas. The assumptions that crime is either prevented, deterred, or merely displaced by such patrol practices can only be proven by proper experiment which is not conducted in a vacuum of inconclusiveness. This experiment was however, even though incomplete, at least a beginning attempt to try to find proper perspectives in policing through testing.

It has been demonstrated that while many police administrators frequently theorize that the presence of a police officer will destroy, or at least diminish, a potential offender's belief in the existence of the opportunity to successfully commit a crime, nobody provides any empirical proof of such a statement. Apparently the repetition of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>38</sup>Report "Operation 25," Police Patrol Readings, ed. Samuel G. Chapman (Springfield: Chas. C. Thomas, 1964), pp. 342-57.

this creed, plus its basis in what is called "common sense" give it a credibility without testing.

The American Bar Association (1972) notes that there is a widespread belief among police administrators that patrol activity constitutes the most important response that police can make to the crime problem but at the same time these administrators seek to devote more resources to patrol there is a growing awareness that relatively little known regarding the value of police patrol as a deterrent to crime.<sup>39</sup>

## This study continues:

It has never been doubted that the presence of a police officer at a given spot will deter the commission of a crime in the immediate area within view of the officer. But it is obviously not economically feasible to consider such a plan for policing nor is it likely that citizens would desire to have a police presence in the numbers that would be required for such coverage. There have been a number of dramatic highly-publicized experiments in which areas have been blanketed by police officers, but these have proved little more than the obvious, that the presence of a police officer will deter crimes in the immediate area subject to his view.40

Larson (1972) reports that preventive patrol is "supposed" to deter individuals from committing crimes but observes that there is considerable disagreement in police circles about how to achieve prevention and deterrence. Larson perceives that there is a need for extensive

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup>American Bar Association, <u>Urban Police Function</u>, p. 56.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>40</sup>Ibid., p. 57.

e>			
pa			
vi			
51			
eđ			
•ea			
مىنىيە ب			
prov			
ser:			
nece			
•			
t			
2			
Ŭ			
the			
u.dt:			
T: de			
de Re			
~			
(n			
Justia			
George Print			
10			

`1

experimental and analytical work to determine to what extent patrol deters and prevents crime.<sup>41</sup>

When it is considered that the twin theories of visibility and deterrence occupy important niches in police planning and equally high places in police training and education, the lack of research mentioned becomes a critical matter demanding full attention.

The literature of policing has furnished some measurement guidelines but most of those seem to be aimed at improving the internal operations in police departments, or providing for a more orderly distribution of personnel, services, and equipment based on efficiency scales and not necessarily geared to impacting crime.

One police training and performance study noted that:

The very basic questions of what does a policeman do, and what skills and knowledge does the policeman need to do his job effectively, need to be answered. The methods used to find these answers must meet the standards of scientific research and must be rigorously tested at every step.<sup>42</sup>

The President's Commission (1965) decried the fact

that:

The most effective way of deploying and employing a department's patrol force is a subject about which deplorably little is known. Evaluation of differing methods of patrol depends on trying out those methods

<sup>41</sup>Richard C. Larson, Urban Police Patrol Analysis (Cambridge, Mass.: MIT Press, 1972), pp. 33-34.

<sup>42</sup>National Institute of Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice, "Police Training and Performance Study," Director, George P. McManus (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1970), p. iii.

over in c in p Missouri resource needed t 1966 St. quantita and also specific response that man policy o paramete Patrol a Passes a intercep is one i of the p Patrol o <sup>street</sup> p <sup>dete</sup>rren

over long periods of time and calculating the changes in crime rates and solution rates that the changes in patrol techniques have produced.43

Larson (1972) records the efforts of the St. Louis, Missouri police department to provide for scientific resource allocation based on predictions of numbers on units needed to answer calls for service. Larson notes that the 1966 St. Louis study demonstrated the feasibility of the quantitative approach to patrol resource allocation problems and also showed that there is a strong need for new models specifically related to police patrol operations, including response and patrol activities in the field. Larson adds that many administrative problems arise from a lack of policy oriented measures of patrol effectiveness.<sup>44</sup>

Larson further illustrates that using reasonable parameter values, the crime intercept possibilities of patrol appear remarkably small. For instance, if a patrol passes a given point once an hour, then the possibility of intercepting a one minute crime, a street robbery for one, is one in sixty, without calculation, it might be added, of the possibility of the crime not being observed by the patrol officer. Larson poses the question that monitorable street patrols require more research as to their crime deterrent effect.<sup>45</sup>

<sup>43</sup>President's Commission, <u>Challenge of Crime</u>, p. 95.
<sup>44</sup>Larson, <u>Urban Police Patrol Analysis</u>, pp. 40-42.
<sup>45</sup>Ibid., p. 147.

	usefu
	the a
	impro
	regar
	time,
	atter
	crime
	effic
	but u
	is with
	are no
	to dis
	in rel
	crime.
	of pol
	functio
	<sup>item</sup> of
	Police
	effecti
	of outp
	of outp

In general, it should be noted that Larson poses useful and accurate assessment methods which are based on the assumption held among police administrators that improvement of the police mobility systems, especially in regard to resource allocation, patrol presence and response time, will aid in the prevention of crime. There are no attempts by Larson in this book to show any relationship to crime prevention except by presuming that speed begets efficiency in performance.

Larson describes response time as ". . . a limited, but useful, proxy measure of effectiveness whose reduction is widely accepted as a desired goal."<sup>46</sup>

Some recent suggestions for measuring performance are notable if only because they indicate continuing efforts to discover some useful scale. The problem, as always, lies in relating the measurement to some result in impacting on crime.

Holzer (1974) suggests a measurement for evaluation of police service which consists of a count of total output functions, both as to paper work and street functions. Each item of output would become part of the total picture of police productivity. Holzer warns that there seems to be no effective way of measuring, or evaluating different items of output. He suggests that, because of this, measurements of output can most likely only be accomplished on a group

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>46</sup>Ibid., p. 32.

	basis.
	ment's
	agenci
	of per
1	point
	law en
]	the pa
	proced
	on an
	Presen
	line i
	consist
	enviro:
	Patrol
	<sup>ra</sup> te or
	requisi
	crime a
	by loca
	Science
	2an -
	tion 2

basis. This system would measure the entire police department's efficiency by piece-work.<sup>47</sup>

Knowles and De Laduranty (1974) observe that police agencies tend to evaluate employees primarily on the basis of personality and behavior rating scales. These authors point out that the duties and responsibilities of today's law enforcement officer have changed considerably within the past two decades but they note that the methods and procedures of evaluating the performance and effectiveness on an individual officer have remained relatively static.

Knowles and De Laduranty believe that research into present performance evaluation techniques is vital to determine if there is any real capacity to measure accurately and consistently the performance of policemen in a changing environment.<sup>48</sup>

Hirsch and Riccio (1974) contend that preventive patrol and response to calls for service are not the ultimate objective of police agencies but are necessary requisites for deterring or preventing crime.

These writers describe patrol service as a mix of crime and non-crime services with the mix balance determined by local objectives and priorities. They suggest placing

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>47</sup>Marc Holzer, "Police Productivity: A Conceptual Framework for Measurement and Improvement," Journal of Police Science and Administration 1 (1974):459-67.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup>Lyle Knowles and Joseph C. De Laduranty, "Performance Evaluation," Journal of Police Science and Administration 2 (March 1974):28-33.

differi
value t
frequen
time in
arrest
crimes
of freq
ir meas
related
the com
Tesearc
Zance i
ecor.omi
at sorb
These a
The
Pro
Wit Mor to Pro
<sup>level</sup> c
They su
and Imp of Poli

•

differing values for all police activity with the highest value based on such factors as the seriousness of the crime, frequency of the crime in areas patrolled, and length of time in the activity. They suggest, for instance, that an arrest for a serious crime in a neighborhood where serious crimes seldom happen, is of more value than one in an area of frequent crime incidence.<sup>49</sup>

This is certain to be one of styles of format used in measuring police productivity but it will have to be related to the impact that such performance has on crime in the community in order to meet the demands for more research into the subject of improving the police performance in crime prevention.

Morgan and Fosler (1974) suggest that in this economic downturn period, police productivity, in order to absorb the drain of less revenue input, must increase. These authors suggest that:

There are great opportunities for improving police productivity in virtually every police department.

With care and discretion police activities can be more precisely measured to provide the information to police managers that is needed for identifying problems and improving performance.

Morgan and Fosler observe that only at the department level can the tools of productivity improvement be tested. They suggest the following formulae for measurement:

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup>Gary B. Hirsch and Lucius J. Riccio, "Measuring and Improving the Productivity of Police Patrol," Journal of Police Science 2 (June 1974):169-84.



 Making a greater proportion of existing patrolmen available for active patrol work (up to a reasonable limit; this does not necessarily mean preventive patrol).

Measure:

Patrolmen assigned to active patrol work Total patrolmen

2. Increasing the "real patrol time" of those who are assigned to active patrol work.

Measure:

Man-hours spent on actual patrol (time servicing demands for police service) Total patrol man-hours

- 3. Utilizing patrol time to best advantage. Broken down according to three principal objectives of patrol.
  - •Crime deterrence. (1) Victimization survey, (2) Selected use of crime rates, and (3) Response time.

Measures (for response time):

Number of calls of a given type responded to in under "X" minutes

Total calls of that type

Number of calls responded to in under "X" minutes Resource devoted to response

•Apprehension.

Measure:

Arrests resulting from patrol surviving the first judicial screening Total patrol man-hours

•Noncrime services.

Measures:

Noncrime calls satisfactorily responded to Total noncrime calls Ì product while s Deasure and "qu judicia of the face c or dis call f for do lent j Octobe <sup>the</sup> e of cr: strat Widel Produ

## Noncrime calls satisfactorily responded to Man-hours devoted to noncrime service calls

Disturbance calls for which no further attention is required Total disturbance calls 50

This presents an interesting view of the theory that production measurement must be department wide because, while suggesting that many factors of police activity be measured, the method includes the use of both crime rates and "quality" arrests, i.e., arrests which survive the first judicial screening.

And so, the search for a way to test the efficiency of the police in their mission of crime continues in the face of a real need to either prove the methods now in use or discard them entirely and perhaps start over again. The call for research must be answered, since the old reasons for doing things a certain way have not been tested.

One very important (historically) research experiment in patrol was conducted in Kansas City, Missouri, from October 1972 through September 30, 1973, designed to measure the effect of patrol on crime and the citizens apprehension of crime. The experiment summary noted that police patrol strategies have always been based on two unproven but widely accepted beliefs that visible police presence

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>50</sup>J. M. Morgan, Jr. and R. Scott Fosler, "Police Productivity," Police Chief 41 (July 1974):28-30.



prevents crime by deterring potential criminal and that the public feels safer because of this patrol presence.

Three controlled levels of patrol were utilized in the year long research. In one area, the police entered only in response to citizen requests; this was the "reactive" area. In a second, or "pro-active" area, the police visibility was doubled, and even tripled, while in the third, "control" area, the normal patterns of routine patrol and response were continued. Analysis of all data gathered in the experiment showed that these three areas did not undergo any significant change. There was no significant difference in the level of crime or citizens' fear of crime in any of the three areas.<sup>51</sup>

To measure the impact on crime the department used a victimization survey, police crime records, police arrest data and a survey of businesses. It was felt that the victim and business surveys would add supportive credibility to the other two sources of data. To measure citizen fear during the experiment, attitudinal surveys of area households and businesses were combined with a survey of citizens who experienced encounters with police and estimates of citizen satisfaction recorded by participant observers.

Twelve different findings were brought forth from the experiment, the most important of which were the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>51</sup>George F. Kelling et al., The Kansas City Preventive Patrol Experiment, A Summary Report, Preface Statement by Joseph D. McNamara, Chief of Police (Washington, D.C.: Police Foundation, 1974), p. v.

		findi
		citiz
		probal
		testi
1		earli
		anothe
		educa
		from (
		by ot:
		Knowle
		Provid
		suffer
		valida
		and in
		Valid
		Ransas
		consec
		Certaj
		to cit
		<sup>fear</sup> c
		the -

findings that crime remained relatively constant as did citizen fear of crime.<sup>52</sup>

The vital segment of this experiment is that it was probably the first such research which faced the problem of testing some police beliefs which have been, as mentioned earlier in this paper, passed on from one generation to another generation of police administrators, trainers, and educators. The study may have stirred a century of silt from the bottom of the police think tank.

This experiment has been subjected to some criticism by other police administrators and researchers. Davis and Knowles (1975) pointed out that the Kansas City research provides five major hypotheses concerning patrol which suffer from or are suspected of both internal and external validity. Davis and Knowles point to some outright errors and infer that the experiment is so affected by external validity as to be generalizable nowhere except possibly Kansas City, Missouri, if even there.<sup>53</sup>

Davis and Knowles pinpoint errors in area size and consequent population density figures. They also note that certain conclusive statements, particularly those relating to citizen perception of patrol conditions and citizens fear of crime are largely from unsupported assumptions.

<sup>53</sup>Edward M. Davis and Lyle Knowles, "A Critique of the Report: An Evaluation of the Kansas City Preventive Patrol Experiment," The Police Chief 12 (1975):22-29.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>52</sup>Ibid., pp. 20-36.

These Cl		
<pre>"reactiv</pre>		
and "cor		
observat		
differen		
research		
the Kans		
and fina		
dissecte		
that the		
intended		
question		
Hypo stat any reac Byro		
of t foun cept		
Hypo be n Patr		
Hypo requ varj		
Hypc Cant		
<sup>Lavi</sup> s-Kn		

-1

These critics note that certain patrol areas labelled "reactive" are, because of being contiguous to "proactive" and "control" areas subject to almost continuous patrol observation. They note this condition would reflect a different "presence" of patrol than claimed by the researchers.<sup>54</sup>

Kelling and Pate (1975), conductors and authors of the Kansas City experiment and subsequent Summary Report and final Technical Report, defend the five hypotheses dissected by Davis and Knowles on the basis of pointing out that the criticism was aimed at a summary report which was intended for non-technical readers. The authors answer questions concerning:

Hypothesis 1--The Victimization Survey--found no statistically significant differences in crime in any of the sixty-nine comparisons made between reactive controls and proactive beats.

Hypothesis 2--measured direct and indirect effect of the experiment on citizens' perceptions and found no significant differences in citizen perception of patrol in any of the three areas.

Hypothesis 3--Citizen fear of crime was found to be not significantly affected by differences in patrol procedure in the three areas.

Hypothesis 4--The amount of police response to request calls was not significantly affected by variations in patrol procedures.

Hypothesis 5--The patrol variations had no significant effects on traffic accidents.<sup>55</sup>

<sup>54</sup>Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>55</sup>George L. Kelling and Tony Pate, "Response to the Davis-Knowles Critique," Police Chief 12 (1975):32-38.

Ke: on the Kar. plete in al of Davis a: observing heavy with this study any experi and time. parison o Τ scientifi since the logue in: by exper indicatio some of t scrutiny N Mnowles c <sup>mana</sup>gemer. <sup>admin</sup>istr tion in : Mowles

Kelling and Pate demonstrate that the Summary Report on the Kansas City patrol experiment is not technically complete in all aspects. The authors ably defend the criticism of Davis and Knowles point by point and end the defense by observing that both the summary and the final report are heavy with warnings that no generalizations are claimed for this study, and they warn of the limitations inherent in any experiment which is specifically conducted as to area and time. They do suggest the possibility of useful comparison of the data.<sup>56</sup>

This Kansas City experiment is probably the first scientific experiment concerning police patrol procedure since the beginning of the profession. The critical dialogue initiated by Davis and Knowles, which is responded to by experimenters Kelling and Pate is a new and healthy indication that police departments can and will subject some of the "time honored" concepts of policing to the scrutiny of experimental research.

Murphy (1975) notes, in commenting on the Davis-Knowles critique, that it takes courage, confidence, management skill, and an open, informed mind for police administrators to face the hard challenges of experimentation in large urban police agencies.<sup>57</sup>

<sup>56</sup>Ibid., p. 38.

<sup>57</sup>Patrick V. Murphy, "A Commentary, The Davis-Knowles Observations," <u>Police Chief</u> 12 (1975):30.

Ū1. theory of prevention for prever for demons patrol are there is a viewed th put the c remarks o tion of r capabili ( copter ca from then in the Un copters a Californi the ausp; funding the Depa <sup>State</sup> Co P. 14.

## Enter the Helicopter, More Speed--More Visibility

Undoubtedly, police administrators, following the theory of visibility and mobility in crime deterrence and prevention looked on the helicopter as a beautiful new tool for prevention patrol because they: ". . . offer a potential for demonstrating a police presence, for searching a large patrol area, and for responding rapidly . . .<sup>58</sup> But there is no evidence that any of these administrators viewed the new tool in police technology as one that would put the crooks out of business as noted earlier in the remarks of two prominent police chiefs welcoming the addition of radio equipped police cars to the crime prevention capability.<sup>59</sup>

Guthrie and Whisenand (1968) report that the helicopter came into police use in New York City in 1947 and from then until now has come into use in many departments in the United States. The first evaluative test of helicopters as an asset to patrol took place in Lakewood, California, over an eighteen month period of 1966-67 under the auspices of the Los Angeles Sheriff's Department with funding from the Office of Law Enforcement Assistance of the Department of Justice. Evaluation was by California State College. Guthrie and Whisenand report that among the

<sup>59</sup>Cf. supra Rutledge p. 30; Vollmer p. 31.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>58</sup>President's Commission, <u>Science and Technology</u>, p. 14.

conclusion. Sky Knight 1. patrol veh activities aircraft. 2. similar n 3 stitute f if it is parallel helicopt IUst be maximized <sup>feas</sup>ible <sup>except</sup> in 6 <sup>operate</sup> p <sup>police</sup> tr Markings by experi has certa

•

conclusions reached in the study which was called Project Sky Knight or PSK, were these:

1. Although the PSK helicopters were utilized as patrol vehicles, it must be recognized that some patrol activities are not capable of being handled effectively by aircraft.

2. Evaluation of PSK and future projects of a similar nature cannot be based on statistical data alone.

3. Under certain conditions, aerial units can substitute for or totally replace ground patrol vehicles. 4. The helicopter cannot maximize its capabilities if it is narrowly confined to geographical areas that parallel those of ground patrol units. Not only does the helicopter operate in a dimension new to police patrol, it must be programmed so that its unique capabilities will be maximized.

5. In urban and suburban areas it is not generally feasible for helicopters to land and give assistance, except in extreme emergencies.

6. Even experienced helicpoter pilots cannot operate police helicopter units effectively without special police training.

7. Despite earlier assumptions, special identifying markings of phsyical locations throughout a city patrolled by experienced pilots and observers are not necessary.

8. While it is recognized that "on-view" patrol has certain values and that original observations may very

well initi siggested oriented a should be merely or 9 an airpor ing lot p police fac given pre: cate info: visors in 10 ter is th <sup>of effect</sup> <sup>police</sup> ve 11 <sup>officers</sup> <sup>with</sup> spec 12 Will be t <sup>city</sup> or c the heli: <sup>a tem</sup>por Folice w

\*

well initiate important activities of Sky Knight, it is suggested that Sky Knight patrols should be primarily taskoriented and that a far greater amount of patrol time should be on a specifically assigned basis rather than in merely orbiting around the patrol area.

9. Relocation of Sky Knight base of operations from an airport facility to the Sheriff's Lakewood Station parking lot proved to be of extreme importance. Having the police facility as a base of operations should always be given preference. This allows helicpoter crews to communicate informally with ground patrol unit crews and supervisors in the police station.

10. The performance of the observer in the helicopter is the single most important determinant of the degree of effectiveness achieved in operating helicopters as police vehicles.

11. All helicopter observers should be selected from officers assigned to ground patrol units and then provided with special training.

12. It is highly probable that the police helicopter will be used, at times, for providing assistance to other city or county departments. Because of this probability, the helicopter should have the capacity to seat, if only on a temporary basis, three people.

13. The optimal benefits of the helicopter in police work will occur only if sufficient geographical area

is involv (number p 1 was the t it could negative being use to an exp altitudes this incr Sky Knigh level. 1 solved wh the rotor learned t F from the <sup>that</sup>, eve <sup>WCOd'</sup>s fo iecreased k∷geles ( reasonab <sup>dec</sup>reased <sup>and</sup> Oper

٦

L

such ser

is involved and the level of called-for police services (number plus type) is moderate to large.

14. One problem quickly became evident, and that was the threat of community rejection of the project before it could really get started. There was substantial and negative public reaction to the noise of the helicopters being used in aerial surveillance of the city. Resorting to an expediency, Sky Knight patrols were flown at higher altitudes during the next three months, and subsequent to this increase, complaints decreased in number. However, Sky Knight effectiveness was reduced to an unacceptable level.

The authors report that this last problem was solved when the manufacturer was able to effectively silence the rotors but the lesson of community acceptance had been learned the hard way.

Finally, Guthrie and Whisenand present statistics from the Los Angeles Sheriff's Department which indicate that, even with the removal of two radio cars from Lakewood's force, major crimes, including robbery and burglary, decreased in Lakewood while increasing in the rest of Los Angeles County. The authors observed that one might reasonably claim that the absence of increased crime or decreased police service was probably due to the presence and operations of Sky Knight units.

Guthrie and Whisenand contend that the benefits of such service in terms of community satisfaction, officer

security, tively. T helicopter some absti dimensions repression T? a regenera stant pol: T capabilit minimal r <sup>observati</sup> all mover factor in "routine" While, as Lakewood <sup>ably</sup> be j the incre <sup>been</sup> beca <sup>in Denve:</sup> of Helic Lary of Samuel G PP. 266security, and crime deterrence cannot be measured objectively. They believe that even the cost-effectiveness of helicopters must be rationalized subjectively and suggest some abstract value returns such as the psychological dimensions of deterrence, omnipresence (of patrol) and repression (stifling opportunities for crime).

They also suggest that the helicopter can generate a regenerative community support through awareness of constant police protection.

The authors conclude that the helicopter has special capability in deterrence or repression in selected areas; minimal response time; increased omnipresence, night time observation; high speed chase of fleeing vehicles; and overall movement flexibility. They feel the only restraining factor involved would be the relegation of the helicopter to "routine" activities.<sup>60</sup>

It might be useful to comment at this point that while, as the authors say, crime may have decreased in Lakewood because of the helicopters, it might also reasonably be inferred, in the absence of other statistics, that the increase in crime in the rest of the county may have been because of the presence of helicopters over Lakewood.

Bower (1968) tells about the use of the helicopter in Denver, Colorado, and recounts the tale of tests

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup>C. Robert Guthrie and Paul M. Whisenand, "The Use of Helicopters in Routine Police Patrol Operations: A Summary of Research Findings," <u>Police Patrol Readings</u>, ed. Samuel G. Chapman (Springfield: Chas. C. Thomas, 1972), pp. 266-75.



conducted in which detectives posing as suspects were chased over highways and finally brought to heel in the bright searchlights of the police "chopper." He reports that the chief in Denver felt the police had a new valuable crime fighting tool and by "pinpointing" areas of illegal activity from robbery to purse snatching, the "eyes in the sky" would patrol them. Bower observes that the helicopter was also seen as useful in high mountain rescue work in ski areas.<sup>61</sup>

There are many articles and stories similar to the Bowers information that have appeared from time to time in daily newspapers around the country. Generally, these accounts tell of a rescue from water, a highway chase or a city incident in which the use of the helicopter is described in glowing terms. Some early attempts at justification were couched in such terms and phrases but none really approach the factual level needed for evaluation.

Much of this type of literature may have more historical value than any use in determining the efficiency of helicopters in the prevention of crime. Occasionally, such a story carried statements which convey the message of success in fighting crime, as in an article by Ayoob (1974) which reports that the Massachusetts State Police helicopter came into use in 1970 and is highly useful in high speed chases and combat situations. Ayoob also cites

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>61</sup>Don Bower, "Crime Copter: Denver's Car in the Sky," <u>Police Patrol Readings</u>, ed. Samuel G. Chapman (Springfield: Chas. C. Thomas, 1972), pp. 275-81.
1		
the helicc		
vation pos		
wonders in		
and rescue		
no further		
Kr		
aviation		
community		
copter p		
flights		
work lo;		
kept in		
provide		
tests c		
the tes		
Contair		
area re		
tation		
(PSK) 64		
Effecti 1974, p		
Police		

the helicopter's application in crowd control as an observation post. Ayoob adds that this helicopter has done wonders in traffic control, criminal investigations, pursuit and rescue but does have its limitations. Ayoob furnishes no further evidence of either usefulness or limitations.<sup>62</sup>

Krumrei (1974) reports that the Detroit Police aviation unit has, in two years of operation, converted the community's complaints about noise into demands for helicopter presence in the air. The unit schedules helicopter flights from 6:00 A.M. to 2:00 A.M. coinciding with precinct work load. During prime crime hours, four helicopters are kept in patrol over the four sections of the city. Krumrei provides statistics which indicate that during the 1971 tests of the helicopters major crimes decreased in all of the test areas. These figures are alone and unsupported and contain no follow-up or indication of contiguous time or area results.<sup>63</sup>

A further example of this type of evaluation presentation is made in a later report on Project Sky Knight (PSK)<sup>64</sup> by Whisenand (1973):

<sup>62</sup>Massad F. Ayoob, "Small Helicopter Wings Are Effective for Law Enforcement," Law and Order, November 1974, pp. 77-80.

<sup>63</sup>David T. Krumrei, "Up, Up and Away," <u>Michigan</u> Police Officer, Winter 1974, pp. 26-65.

<sup>64</sup>See Guthrie and Whisenand supra at page 57.

	City to a at 1 male yard the mite and 207)
	City Knig alar hour cont grou A ch arre
init	ial
gra:	t fr
the	Law
eig	iteen
Los	Ange
1955	and
	nune
	savo
	cop-
	nor.
	11e 20r:
	$\neg$
Polic	∶e,

City of Lakewood, California (5-10-68). In responding to a burglary just occurred call in a resiential area at 11:35 p.m. The Sky Knight helicopter observed two males of a similar description inside a nearby school yard. Ground units were directed by the helicopter to the location where investigation proved the males commited the burglary. They were subsequently arrested and the stolen property recovered. (Refer File Y-555-207)65

And, Whisenand also reports:

City of Bellflower, California (5-10-68). The Sky Knight helicopter responded to a silent burglary alarm at an electronics store during early morning hours. Being the first unit to arrive, Sky Knight contained the building, utilizing spotlights, until ground units arrived and observed a window pried open. A check of the interior resulted in one suspect being arrested for burglary. (Refer Y-555-159)<sup>66</sup>

Whisenand tells of the early returns from the initial helicopter tests in Lakewood, California, under a grant from the Office of Law Enforcement Assistance (now the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration) during eighteen months of 1966 and 1967. He observes that the Los Angeles Sheriff's Department had used helicopters since 1955 and provided some experiential information about them:

Assignments from the beginning were varied and numerous.

1. Rescues average more than one per week.

 Rapid transportation of specialists annually saves many hundreds of man-hours and tax dollars.
 3. Used as a surveillance platform, the helicopter has proven time and again that there is little hope for a suspect to escape once he has been spotted.
 4. In major operations, helicopters provide field commanders with a highly mobile observation and communications command post.

<sup>65</sup>Paul M. Whisenand, "The Use of Helicopters by Police," The Police Chief 36 (February 1968):32.

<sup>66</sup>Ibid., p. 34.

i		
C.		
p		
c		
a. d.		1
		1
6 and		
a rep		<b>.</b>
which		
techno		
Would		
fashic		
care i		
1.		
2.		
3.		
4.		
5.		
6.		
<sup>i</sup> t is		
crime		

5. The float-equipped helicopters have been instrumental in land and sea rescues and have, on several occasions, been used to tow disabled small craft.

6. As patrol vehicles, helicopters continually prove to be a major factor in the apprehension of criminal suspects.

7. High speed chases, gang fights, vandalism and numerous regulatory offenses are continually deterred by aerial surveillance.<sup>67</sup>

Whisenand does not furnish any specifics for items 6 and 7 other than footnoting that the information is from a report by the department. This is the type of statement which is typical of stories which describe new police technological tools. Statements like item number seven would probably by difficult to document in empirical fashion.

Whisenand mentions that Project Sky Knight (PSK) came into being in June 1966 with six major objectives:

- 1. Improve Police Response time.
- 2. Demonstrate successful daytime surveillance methods.
- 3. Initiate effective nighttime surveillance.
- 4. Increase patrol observation.
- 5. Increase officer security.
- 6. Reduce crime in the project area.<sup>68</sup>

If these objectives are listed in order of priority it is interesting to note that the objective of reducing crime in the area is last.

<sup>67</sup>Ibid., p. 34
<sup>68</sup>Ibid., pp. 34-36.

W. mental he findings Whisenand primary f and for : connand discover helicop on spec Cit dis in Ni (R and co Ci ch ob pa th the obs gra

2

;

through

Whisenand tells us that eighteen months of experimental helicopter use produced a plethora of reserach findings which are reported in detail elsewhere.<sup>69</sup> But Whisenand does report here that the researchers place primary focus for success of the program on field commanders and for success of the units on observers, who must be in command of the aerial unit. Whisenand mentions that it was discovered that, while "on-view" patrol has certain values, helicopter units should be task-oriented and should patrol on specific assignment basis.<sup>70</sup>

Whisenand further narrates:

City of Paramount, California (5-11-68). At a major disturbance scene, Sky Knight directed ground units in effectively dispersing approximately 200 juveniles. Nine persons were arrested for various offenses. (Refer File Y-556-429)71

and continues:

City of Lakewood, California (5-28-68). While checking Lakewood Shopping Center area, Sky Knight observed a male loitering around vehicles in the parking lot, and eventually sitting inside one of the parked cars. A ground unit was directed to the male, and as a result of the Sky Knight crew's observations, the suspect was arrested for attempt grand theft auto. (Refer File Y-563-190)<sup>72</sup>

Both of the above instances are among those sprinkled throughout this article. These stories are repeated as

<sup>69</sup>See Guthrie and Whisenand, supra p. 57.
<sup>70</sup>Whisenand, "Use of Helicopters," pp. 36-37.
<sup>71</sup>Ibid., p. 38.
<sup>72</sup>Ibid.

narrated i
earlier, (
police at
such reco
questions
the arre
sopter F
provide
Min pro cit pat lea are Cor
TYF
Pat N J
nei A M
Com dur \$10 to c cars copt of \$
Viepared March 26 Helicopt

narrated because they appear to be typical, as noted earlier, of stories concerning the use of helicopters by police at the beginning of such innovative programs. Each such recounting leaves the reader with some unanswered questions in his mind, such as, the final disposition of the arrested persons.

A predictive evaluation of the Santa Monica helicopter program was made by Chief Reinhold (1968) who provided these figures:

Minimum daily air time would be ten hours, which will provide six complete (block by block) patrols of the city in each twenty-four hour period. A similar patrol intensity with patrol cars would require at least six cars, which (due to "called for" services, are seldom, if ever, available at the present time. Comparative annual costs for such coverage are: 2

TYPE OF PATROL									COMPARATIVE ANNUAL COST						
Patrol Car															
Vehicle <b>s</b>	(6)	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	.\$ 21,900
Manpower	(18)		•	•		•	•	•		•	•	•	•	•	. 178,848
Total	•••	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	.\$200,748
Helicopter															
Aircraft	(2)	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	.\$ 85,775
Manpower	(6)	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•		•	•	•	•	. 62,928
-															\$148,703

Comparative equipment costs and special instruction during the first year of operation would equal \$108,400 for the helicopter police patrol as opposed to only \$20,100 for the six fully equipped patrol cars. However, after the first 21 months, the helicopter patrol will produce a minimum annual savings of \$52,000.73

<sup>73</sup>Earl Reinhold, "Helicopter Patrol," A Memorandum prepared for City Managers Office (Santa Monica, Calif.: March 26, 1968), pp. 4-5 quoted in Whisenand, "Use of Helicopters," p. 40.

	evaluat
	provide
	calls.
	copter
· · ·	that t
	servic
	provi
	those
	that
	Lus
	late
	the
	1972.
	for r
	from
	Maint
	Per h
	"ould
	it can
	<sup>eval</sup> ua
	In addi
	Wirtual

The obvious questions concerning this type of evaluation arise because of assertions that helicopters provide more intense patrol because cars are on "service" calls. One wonders who would answer the calls when helicopters replaced the cars. Or perhaps the assumption is that the helicopter patrol would be so intense that no service calls would be forthcoming.

At any rate, when one looks at how Chief Reinhold provides a financial statement and predicts by the use of those figures, a \$52,000 annual saving, it becomes evident that the use of helicopters is often subject to some very unusual systems of evaluation.

It is also interesting to note historically that a later study of the Santa Monica department reveals that the city did get and operate two helicopters from 1968 to 1972. Two were necessary because one was usually grounded for maintenance. A full time mechanic was hired to provide from six to ten hours flight time in two shifts per day. Maintenance and fuel costs were approximately forty dollars per hour.

When it is considered that maintenance and fuel would cost \$140,000 per year, for the ten hours of patrol, it can readily be seen that the police chief's predictive evaluation was, to say the least, inaccurate and incomplete. In addition, the citizens of this 8.3 square mile community virtually bombarded the police department with complaints

about noi abandoned L PHASE pro Enforceme police d crime ar but note communic cent in areas a patroll dence o locatio such ea use of h burgeoni to two f growing State, C Borr 1975), aent--Ar 1974):62

.

about noise from the night patrols. In 1972 Santa Monica abandoned the use of helicopters.<sup>74</sup>

Lateef (1974) offers a brief evaluation of the PHASE project (Police Helicopters For Area Selective Enforcement) which was initiated in Columbus, Ohio, by the police department in 1972. Lateef points to the decrease in crime areas patrolled by the three helicopters in use there, but notes the existence of other variables, such as better communications and more officers per unit area.

Lateef directs attention to the reduction of 14 percent in the crime rate in Columbus in helicopter patrolled areas and the increase of 4.9 percent in non-helicopter patrolled areas and suggests the possibility that the incidence of crime has merely been shifted to a different location. This report is largely incomplete as are many such early evaluations.<sup>75</sup>

Maltz (1971) does one of the early summaries of the use of helicopters in law enforcement. He observes that the burgeoning use of these machines by police are attributable to two factors--the steady increase in crime and the growing financial assistance to law enforcement agencies

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>74</sup>J. M. Chester et al., <u>A Preliminary Survey of</u> State, County and Local Law Enforcement Agencies Utilizing <u>Air Borne Vehicles</u> (McLean, Virginia: Mitre Corporation, 1975), Vol. I, pp. 12-13.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>75</sup>A. Bari Lateef, "Helicopter Patrol in Law Enforcement--An Evaluation," <u>Journal of Police Science</u> 2 (March 1974):62-65.

		from th
		federal
		of pol:
		tions :
		service
_		
		projec
		City, 1
		projec
		areas
		Points
		crime
		Whethe
		prese
		sprung
		a "per
		creati
		tion w
		a poli
		hundre
		to be ;
		as to
		should
		incide

from the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration of the federal government. Maltz also points to the encouragement of police agencies using helicopters and attributing reductions in crime rates to the use of helicopters in patrol service.

Maltz tells of the Lakewood, California, helicopter project (Project Sky Knight) in 1966 and the 1969 Kansas City, Missouri, helicopter program and notes that neither project had a follow-up study or any study of the adjacent areas to test for crime displacement. Additionally, Maltz points out that Kansas City failed to allow for seasonal crime rate variations.

Maltz also indicates that there is a difference in whether the deterrent effect rose from the helicopter "presence" creating <u>actual</u> risk of apprehension or if it sprung from the program's publicity which could bring about a "perceived" risk of arrest. Maltz sees the latter as creation of a risky program using a "paper tiger."

Maltz dissects the theory of deterrence in connection with helicopters and discusses the actual ability of a police observer to see crimes in progress from five hundred feet in the air. He believes that an effort ought to be made to measure the deterrent effect of helicopters as to all conditions of patrol.

Maltz suggests that the proper use of helicopters should involve the analysis of the types and number of incidents for its use. These should be temporally

	coord
	copte:
	notes
	helic
3	a mod
	nodel
	Model
	1. <u>P</u>
	2. <u>p</u>
	Helic
	Eelic
	Not
	Helic Not
	tha
	On a Pila
	Othe
	240-
	-roĝr

coordinated with predictive uses in order to have helicopters in the air and possibly prepositioned. This, Maltz notes, is an old police manpower position play.

Maltz pointed out, as has earlier been noted, that helicopter evaluations are frequently baseless. He shows a model of that method contrasted to his proposed evaluation model.

Hard and the second second second

ŗ.

## Model:

1. <u>Present</u> (As it might appear in a police department's annual report): In 1970, the police helicopters were instrumental in effecting three arrests of robbery suspects. This is a 50 percent increase over 1969.

2. Proposed:

	Dispositions	of 146 "	Robbery	7		
in Progress" Calls						
	Success,	No	False			
	e.g. arrest	Success	Calls			
Helicopter Used	3	17	24	Success rate using helicopter: $3 = 15$ % 20		
Helicopter Not Used	6	44	51	Success rate not using helicopter: 6 = 12%		
				20		
Helicopter r Not schedul	not used beca led to fly at	use: Hel be	icopte: cause:	c used unsuccessfully		
that time	_	<b>21</b> Un	able to	o locate suspects 8		
Unscheduled	1 maintenance	e 10 Lo	ong time	e delay in		
On another	assignment	<b>8</b> q	etting	to site 5		
Pilot not a	available	4 Ot	her	4		
Other		$\frac{7}{50}$		<del>17</del> 76		

<sup>76</sup>Michael D. Maltz, "Evaluation of Air Mobility Programs," The Police Chief 38 (April 1971):34-39. 11 th Ie pa si he ()Sł P S • ż C C This is not a particularly useful method of determining impact on crime but may be handy as a contrast to the skimpiness of what Maltz designates as the "present" method. The idea proposed by Maltz that all helicopter patrol ought to be evaluated as to deterrence is a very significant point which leaves only the question, how?

Davis (1971) tells of the 1969-70 Los Angeles police helicopter program, Air Support To Regular Operations (ASTRO) which tested with the use of two helicopters in selected patrol areas. Patternless patrols were flown in peak crime hours.

Davis notes that the program was evaluated extensively, thoroughly, and scientifically by the Jet Propulsion Laboratory of Pasadena, California, as to effectiveness.

The Laboratory summary reported that in both test divisions the resulting changes where actual offenses committed were significantly lower than the predicted offenses, could only be attributed to the helicopter patrol operations.<sup>77</sup>

Davis defends the report in the light of the Maltz<sup>78</sup> criticism which delved into the difficulty of observers noting crime in progress. Davis tells of how one helicopter observed watched a pedestrian enter a store

<sup>78</sup>See Maltz, supra p. 70.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>77</sup>Edward M. Davis, "Astro: Los Angeles Police Department Helicopter Program," <u>The Police Chief</u> 38 (November 1971):10, 66-67.

	wearing
	wearing
	nsie a
	creat
	arres
	evalu
	cost
	note
	firs
	Such
	the
	poin
	brop
	recei
	misie
	This :
	the "r
	Practic
	cerning
	P. 67.
	of Airg (Per-
	, contra

wearing one type of clothing and exit a few minutes later wearing different clothing. A radio unit was summoned and made an arrest, after investigation, for shoplifting.

Davis agrees with Maltz, however, in the risk of creating a "paper tiger" by posing a "perceived" risk of arrest and further agrees that a serious research into evaluation is needed which should include response time and cost effectiveness.<sup>79</sup>

Incidentally, it may be historically important to note that the arrest incident related by Davis may be the first claimed case of the use of the helicopter to deter such crimes as shoplifting.

Felkenes (1969) presents an interesting aspect of the use of helicopters for police speed control when he points out several instances where states were having problems in traffic enforcement because the ground officer received the information from the air officer. The traffic misdemeanor was not committed in the presence of the officer. This legal problem has been largely resolved by the use of the "radar" speed detectors on ground units, and which are practically the only methods in use presently.<sup>80</sup>

Felkenes also poses an interesting question concerning the use of helicopters in police surveillance during

79 Davis, "Astro: Los Angeles Helicopter Program," p. 67.

<sup>80</sup>George T. Felkenes, "Some Legal Aspects of the Use of Aircraft in Law Enforcement," <u>The Police Chief</u> 36 (February 1969):28-30.

patrol ( into **a** s scop bein spec is c Felkene cameras provide eventua illustra theorie crime de authori trators impact <sup>the</sup> fie Souther since 1 Survei Adminis

1

patrol over private property. Felkenes boxes the problem into a standard of reasonableness:

. . . whether the thing done, in terms of its form, scope, nature, incidents and effect, impress as being fundamentally unfair or unreasonable in the specific situation when the immediate end sought is considered against the private right affected.<sup>81</sup>

Felkenes points out that any police use of long range cameras or listening devices ought to be constitutionally provided for. He suggests that the entire program may eventually need new legislation.<sup>82</sup>

# Implications for Trainers and Educators

The literature reviewed in this chapter has amply illustrated the belief of police administrators in the theories of visibility and mobility as bearing directly on crime deterrence and prevention. These authors were largely authoritative police procedure experts, as police administrators, trainers, and educators, and have had an enormous impact on the retention and sharing of these theories in the field of criminal justice.

Tenney (1971) reported that the University of Southern California has offered law enforcement degrees since 1929 and Michigan State University had offered a

<sup>81</sup>U.S. vs. Cook, 213 F. Supp. 568, (1962).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>82</sup>George T. Felkenes, "The Right of Privacy: Police Surveillance by Aircraft," Journal of Police Science and Administration 1 (1974):345-48.



Bachelor of Science degree in Police Administration since 1935. By the fall of 1968, there were 261 programs in law enforcement available in 234 separate institutions of higher education, according to a survey conducted by the International Association of Chiefs of Police.

Tenney noted that this survey found that the five leading texts in law enforcement courses in higher education included Wilson's Police Administration and the International City Managers Association's Municipal Year Book.<sup>83</sup> These volumes have become part of both training and higher education in law enforcement and both volumes promote the theories of visibility and mobility<sup>84</sup> as the prime patrol methods in crime deterrence and prevention.

In Chapter I it was pointed out that some police theories and methods have been built on a basis of tradition without actual test. It was observed that the theories of visibility and mobility as directly related to crime deterrence and prevention have been passed along from agency to agency, from administrator to trainer, and from teacher to pupil and have gained credibility in repetition.

As an example of this it is notable that one midwest police department issued a training bulletin which explained

<sup>84</sup>See Wilson, "Police Administration," supra at p. 32 and Municipal Police Administration, supra at p. 34.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>83</sup>Charles W. Tenney, Jr., <u>Higher Education Programs</u> in Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1971), p. 51.

to offi use. T activit Cri 1. 2. 3. 4. 5.

to officers those situations when a helicopter might be of use. This bulletin was composed largely of incidents from activity reports of a West Coast police department:

# Crimes-in-Progress

- At 2:19 a.m. on January 20, 1971, the helicopter responded to a reported armed robbery at 21st and Arkansas. The air crew observed a vehicle leaving the scene, and directed approaching ground units to stop it. Upon stopping, the occupants of the vehicle jumped and ran. During the chase the helicopter illuminated the area and two men were apprehended after a brief exchange of gunfire.
- 2. Responding to a silent burglar alarm at an automotive supply store, helicopter crews observed a burglary suspect attempt to escape through the darkness, utilizing a hole in the fence at the rear of the store property. Unable to avoid the lights from the hovering helicopter, the suspect surrendered to Deputies directed to him by air crews. (Sheriff file Y-365-966)
- 3. Dispatched to the Village Del Market on the report of two suspicious subjects. Located the subjects at the rear of the market. They then fled on foot. Ground crews were directed to the subjects. Two male adults arrested for attempted B & E. Time 12:36 a.m.
- A car salesman observed a suspect speed from the 4. lot in a stolen red sports car. He reported the theft to Lakewood Station. Sky Knight was alerted by radio and quickly located suspect and vehicle speeding through residential streets. Switching to air-to-car frequency, Sky Knight directed ground units toward an intercept. Aware of, but unable to escape the helicopter, the suspect panicked and lost control of the car, hitting a tree. Uninjured, he attempted to hide in bushes but was observed continuously by the helicopter crew and taken into custody at that location. (Sheriff file Y-275-010)
- 5. 1-12-72, 1207 hours, Helicopter #182 was dispatched to the location of a possible house burglary in progress. The helicopter crew arrived over the scene and spotted three subjects running from the rear of a house as a ground unit pulled up in front. They got into a black over red car and

tr: We aff in out the ga the ga the sy: th At tu Fro ina hei roo wha dii the Chases 1. Two fle a p qui the Gro sus 2. A Sk po 12 th ou co 3. At ca ca th en gr ar ar ac wg

٠

tried to elude us by driving around in circles. We directed ground units to pursue the subjects, after following the subjects for about ten minutes in a high speed chase. The three subjects jumped out of the car and ran in three different directions. One subject ran into a garage and the helicopter crew kept that subject pinned in the garage and directed ground units to him. We kept the other subjects in sight and directed the ground units to one subject and used the P.A. system to direct two citizens to capture the third subject, who was trying to escape on a transit bus.

6. At 6:20 p.m., Helicopter 181 responded to a disturbance with a gun involved at 773 1/2 South Front Street. As the cruiser officer was knocking on the door a subject was observed by the helicopter crew climbing out of a window onto the roof. He then crossed to an adjoining building, where he dropped to the ground. His location and direction of travel was radioed to 110 Cruiser and the subject was arrested.

#### Chases

- Two armed robbery, kidnap and grand theft suspects fled on foot into the dark, after a collision with a police unit. A responding Sky Knight crew quickly observed the fleeing suspects and flooded the area with light, giving them no place to hide. Ground units easily located and arrested both suspects. (Sheriff file Y-345-678).
- 2. A sixteen year old reckless driver, pursued into Sky Knight territory by ground units of four policing jurisdictions at speeds in excess of 120 MPH, pulled to the side when overtaken from the air. His reason . . . "I thought I could outrun the police cars, but when I saw the helicopter, I knew it was all over."
- 3. At 5:40 p.m., Helicopter 182 responded to a radio call that two cruisers were involved in a chase at Starr and Dennison Avenues. The crew observed the two subjects, who had bailed out of the car, enter a building at Starr and High. They directed ground units to the location. As one cruiser arrived the two suspects ran out the rear door and north in the alley. The helicopter crew advised the ground units and the two subjects were arrested at Wall and Smith Place.

4. At 4:35 p.m., Cruiser 21 put out a chase involving a red motorcycle in a field south of Tamarack, east of Karl Road. 182 Helicopter spotted the motorcycle in a new apartment complex, notified and directed ground units to the scene and the arrest was made.

# Missing Persons

Report of a senile lady who walked away from a nursing home on Swigart Road. We located the lady and directed a ground unit to her.

## Location of Objects

At 2:50 p.m., Helicopter 182 received a request from the Homicide Squad to search the area north of Fifth Avenue and Leonard and east of Glick's Warehouse for a dress that was torn from a woman, in a rape, during the night. 182 Helicopter crew found the dress in a field of high grass on the west side of the warehouse. This property was recovered and held as evidence.

Location of Suspect Persons/Vehicles

- Assisted ground unit locate a green Cadillace that was looking for in the area of Town and Country. Located the car and directed him to the car. Time 12:49 a.m.
- 2. At 8:32 p.m., Helicopter 181 was dispatched by radio to Glenwood and State Streets where a wanted felon was running from a ground unit. The subject was spotted by the helicopter and he ran inside a bar. This information was relayed to the ground units and he was caught and arrested.
- 3. 11-18-71, 1058 hours, Helicopter #182 was dispatched to Southview to assist ground units in locating several subjects involved in an unarmed robbery. The ground units were on foot in a wooded area in the park and were directed to the subjects by use of the aerial P.A. system. This resulted in six (6) arrests.
- 4. Dispatched to assist a ground unit who lost a suspicious car on Wilington Pike. We located the car and directed the ground unit to its location. Time: 11:00 p.m.

bull are this copt July same With Bulle

ľ

.

P. 66

- Ground unit requested our assistance in locating a subject on a motorcycle who fled from him. Subject was located. Time 6:55 p.m.
- 6. At 8:13 p.m., Radio dispatched Helicopter 181 to locate a personal injury motorcycle accident in the wooded trials northwest of Riverside Hospital. The youth was found lying on the ground where he had wrecked and the emergency squad crew was directed to him by the helicopter.<sup>85</sup>

These incidents, repeated as part of a training bulletin, seem aimed more at selling the program than they are to be used for actual training purposes. Stories of this type can be found in other evaluations of police helicopter programs.<sup>86</sup>

This same department began helicopter patrol in July of the same year and the first reports were much the same as the type referred to in the training bulletin as witness these incidents reported in the local newspaper:

To cut down on the response time for the 'copter, the craft spends as much of its on-duty time in the air as possible. It circles in various sections of the city for periods of about one and one-half hours each, according to Sgt. Jerry Mills, helicopter unit chief, and is ready to answer on a second's notice any crime-in-progress calls like robberies, burglaries, prowlers or high speed chases.

One night about 1 a.m., police got a burglar alarm call from the drug store on South Cedar. The copter and a patrol car arrived at about the same time and the aerial craft covered the area with its glaring search lights while officers went in and found the burglar hiding behind a door. Mills said that was a classic example of what the copter is

85<sub>Lansing</sub> (Michigan) Police Department, <u>Training</u> Bulletin #5, April 3, 1974.

<sup>86</sup>See Whisenand "The Use of Helicopters," Supra p. 66.

supposed to do--support ground units and contain a suspect with its lights and loud speakers.

Another night civilians reported four subjects going through Salvation Army boxes on the east side. The copter flew over and directed ground units to the looters.

Last Saturday night someone was reported going through trucks at the Lansing Candy Co. on May Street. Using its light, the copter followed one figure from the scene as he pushed a bicycle between two buildings, then got on and rode to Johnson Street, went north across Oakland to Porter, then west and finally cut between two houses and stopped beneath a blue spruce tree.

"Mind you," said Mills, "the observer identified it as a spruce tree, not just a pine. They radioed their information to a patrol car and the officers drove right up to the tree and arrested a juvenile. And it was a blue spruce, too."

And the third night out, the copter crew participated in a high speed chase of a car that sped west on Jolly from Logan at speeds up to 100 miles per hour.

Mills said the faster copter got close enough to the car to apparently convince the driver he couldn't get away, and the pursuit car easily caught up with it. Mills predicted that future chases may not reach such speeds when drivers become convinced they can't get too far.

In one of its most dramatic successes, the chopper was the first unit on the scene after it was reported persons were on the roof of Cumberland School. The copter's public address system kept the would-be vandals at bay until a police car arrived.<sup>87</sup>

These recitals are typical of the passage of patrol system values from one police agency to another without scientific testing. These statements are all the more in need of review when it is realized that some of them are a part of the training material offered to police officers in at least one department.

Without testing there is no other material available. There is no proven method to teach to police

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>87</sup>Dick Frazier, "Eye in Sky Copter Here to Stay," State Journal, Sunday, July 7, 1974, p. B4.

recruits. There are no curricula for them in the area of police patrol which are based on scientifically tested and evaluated theory to be used in higher education programs in criminal justice.

## Summary

It has been illustrated by the literature, that the addition of technological advances to patrol systems which increased visibility and mobility were often hailed as the beginning of the end of crime. This has not happened yet but the theories of visibility and mobility are still part of police training and educational programs.

If these theories are to have continued credibility in use, training and education, in the face of continually rising crime rates, they must be subjected to full and continual research until proven or rejected.

The report of the President's Commission (1967) pointed out the crux of the problem confronting both the trainer and the educator in criminal justice:

Research methods must be devised to produce accurate understanding of current practices and, so far as it is measurable, their impact upon crime and the community. Adequate evaluation of existing practices may require the collection of a substantial amount of data not now gathered. Study of alternative practices may be aided by a willingness to engage in experimentation and demonstration projects.<sup>88</sup>

<sup>88</sup>President's Commission, "The Police," p. 25.
pleas tics theor condu previ Misso duct helic refin relat crime the b conce What tools and m Visib justi that . train. reali

•

Public relations releases, stories and articles to please the community, and incomplete, inconclusive statistics have, thus far been the only proof offered that these theories are correct.

There has been a minimum of experimental research conducted in the field of criminal justice. In fact, the previously reported patrol experiment in Kansas City, Missouri, may well be the only scientific attempt to conduct an experiment concerning these theories.<sup>89</sup>

The literature reveals little information concerning helicopters and their use in police patrol as a highly refined and capable tool in patrol procedures. Their relationship to the theories of visibility and mobility in crime prevention and deterrence has widely been fostered on the basis of speed. Since there is a paucity of information concerning helicopters, this study will begin to provide what is seen as some basic information about these new tools with a view to providing the starting point for closer and more incisive looks into one area of the theories of visibility and mobility in crime deterrence and prevention.

The importance of those theories in the criminal justice system cannot be overstated when it is realized that these theories are an integral part of police practice, training, and higher education and when it is further realized that a goodly number of people may depend on their

<sup>89</sup>C.f. Kelling, Kansas City Patrol, Supra p. 52.

being theori are id tinuou ment a questi tion f ¥as di ment. used b design was de depart questi

.

.

being factual. Because of this, it is essential that these theories be looked at in detail until all their components are identified and described, and then subjected to continuous research until their real impact on crime is proven.

In addition to using the literature of law enforcement as a probe instrument this study made use of two questionnaires to obtain additional data.

And a second second second

One questionnaire was devised by the Mitre Corporation for the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration and was directed to all agencies using aircraft in law enforcement. This data is unpublished at this writing and was used by special permission of the Mitre Corporation and designated as the Chester survey. The other questionnaire was devised by this author and was directed to police departments using helicopters in patrol work. Both questionnaires are detailed in Chapter III.

#### CHAPTER III

#### METHODOLOGY

#### Basis of Necessity for Description

This is a descriptive study of certain methods and theories of police patrol; specifically those concerning and associated with visibility and mobility. In Chapters I and II the material has illustrated the basis and beginnings of these methods and theories. It has also been shown there is a firm belief that speed in mobility contributes heavily to increased visibility and provides a greater capacity for crime deterrence and prevention. This belief is still part of the very cornerstone of police training, education, and planning. Because of this belief in the efficacy of speed, the study focuses on the use of the helicopter for patrol service.

It has been demonstrated that some previous studies of police patrol practices have been largely oriented to public relations and frequently consist only of tales about police chases and captures. Other studies have been conducted seriously, as though for the purpose of justification, but have failed to provide for validity. These studies

	have
	plet
	true
	"one
	Once
1	Caus
1	rela
	rate
	whic
	tior
	rely
	And,
	rela
	to d
	Caus
	impo
	Pict
	Vita
	evaj
	~
	han.
	Rand Rand

have resulted in the release of statistics which are incomplete and conclusions which are invalid. This is especially true of helicopter studies. Campbell (1973) refers to the "one-shot" study, in which a single group is studied only once, subsequent to some agent or treatment presumed to cause change, as scientifically valueless.<sup>1</sup>

It is of critical importance to discover whether a relationship exists between visibility, mobility, and crime rates when it is considered that crime has reached levels which threaten the very life style of many communities.

It is of equal importance to probe for such relationship because police education, training, and planning rely heavily on the presumed existence of this relationship. And, as demonstrated in Chapters I and II, this presumed relationship is a large part of the very fabric of efforts to deter and prevent crime.

In order to properly evaluate a process, or to seek cause and effect by experimenting in a process, it is important to provide future researchers with a complete picture of that process as it exists.

An accurate description of an existing model is vitally important as a basis for suggesting avenues of evaluation. A true depiction of all the existing features

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup>Donald T. Campbell and Julian C. Stanley, <u>Experi-</u> mental and Quasi-Experimental Designs for Research (Chicago: Rand McNally, 1973), p. 6.

of any to eve of the Chapte evider visibi detern leader this t gation to cor depart witho: to res vieweg consid some futur becau crimi all <sup>G.</sup>

of any phenomenon under study must be the first step leading to eventual evaluation and testing.

### Sources of Data

One source of data in this study was the literature of the profession. The review of this literature in Chapter II was actually conducted as a probe to search for evidence of the philosophy which perpetuates the belief in visibility and mobility in patrol as effective in crime deterrence and prevention.

The literature also furnishes views of those leaders of the profession of policing as they concerned this theory both in relation to use in practice and promulgation in training and education.

As part of this picture, it was considered useful to conduct an inventory of all helicopters in use by police departments in the United States. This information, even without additional comment or analysis should be of value to researchers, whether experimental or historical. When viewed with other information sought in this study, it is considered that such data might provide one of the keys to some suggestions for eventual evaluation of the process for future testing. This evaluation would be doubly important because of its reflection on crime prevention and on criminal justice training and education.

Dewey (1938) made the point that "the belief that all genuine education comes about through experience does

not m This exper copte of ce helic the 1 visib over inclu numbe civil numbe 420 h using agenc it way coupl Collie 1968: the i ness, justi purpc

, 1

not mean that all experiences are genuinely educative."<sup>2</sup> This may turn out to be especially true of the repetitious experiential recounting connected with the use of helicopters in police patrol service. The continual reiteration of certain types of incidents which seem geared to gird the helicopter in policeman's clothes may be miseducative in the long run. The implied support of the theories of visibility and mobility without test are undoubtedly carried over to training and education programs.

In 1960 there were 31 civil government agencies including police departments using 97 helicopters. A small number were non-police agencies. By 1975, there were 203 civil government agencies using 632 helicopters. This number includes 154 police agencies using approximately 420 helicopters.

Although one large city police department began using helicopters in the late 1940s and some other police agencies made sporadic experiments with these machines, it was not until many surplus military helicopters were coupled with federal grants through the Omnibus Crime Bill,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>2</sup>John Dewey, Experience and Education (New York: Collier Books, 1963 reprint), p. 25.

<sup>3</sup>Omnibus Crime Control and Safe Streets Act of 1968: "To assist state and local governments in reducing the incidence of crime, to increase the effectiveness, fairness, and coordination of law enforcement and criminal justice systems at all levels of government and for other purposes."

		hat t
		losso
		atrol
		10 gre
1		
		ervic
		ries
		ary s
		'ehic]
		hich
		nvol
		sing
		ddit
		isti
		Ypes
		iome
		)ode]
		/
		lelid
		lico Lier
		litra
		'P.

that the phenomenon of the hovering patrol vehicle really blossomed in the criminal justice agencies of America.

Due to the relatively short time that this airborne patrol vehicle has been used by police departments there is no great bank of information available.

Lists of police agencies using helicopters in patrol service were obtained from two sources--the Aerospace Industries Directory (1974) and the Mitre Corporation's Preliminary Survey of Law Enforcement Agencies Utilizing Airborne Vehicles (1975).<sup>4</sup> These lists were combined into one roster which includes all police agencies in the United States involved in the use of helicopters as police vehicles.

In addition to providing a list of police agencies using helicopters, each of these sources provided some additional information. Aerospace provided an alphabetical listing of the agencies along with a brief inventory of the types of helicopters in use.<sup>5</sup> Aerospace also furnished some brief statistical data relating to certain types and models of helicopters.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>6</sup>Ibid., p. 200.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup>Aerospace Industries Association, <u>Directory of</u> <u>Helicopter Operators in the United States</u>, <u>Canada and Puerto</u> <u>Rico</u> (Washington, D.C.: Aerospace Industries Association of <u>America</u>, Inc., 1974); and J. M. Chester et al., <u>Preliminary</u> <u>Survey of State</u>, <u>County</u>, and <u>Local Law Enforcement Agencies</u> <u>Utilizing Airborne Vehicles</u>, vol. 1 (McLean, Virginia: The <u>Mitre Corporation</u>, 1975).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup>Aerospace, <u>Directory of Helicopter Operators</u>, pp. 161-85.

ageno gover and ) also . absor study great , 25 st using sampl one s use i ment. branc count helic

Vol.

-

1

Chester's survey encompassed all law enforcement agencies using helicopters in local, county, or state government applications. This list also noted the number and kind of helicopter in use by each agency.<sup>7</sup> Chester also provided a considerable amount of data which has been absorbed in and dovetailed with other data obtained in this study. This additional data will be discussed later, in greater detail.

# Techniques of Data Collection

The combined roster included 154 police agencies in 25 state, 64 county, and 65 local governments which were using helicopters. From this population was selected a sample which included at least one local, one county, and one state agency from every state where such service is in use in any police agency of these three branches of government. There are 11 states that have no such service in any branch of police service in the state. These are:

Arkansas	New Hampshire
Connecticut	New Mexico
Idaho	North Dakota
Maine	Oregon
Montana	Vermont
	Wyoming

The final sample consisted of 98 agencies, local, county, and state. Those agencies which were not using helicopters in crime patrol, such as fish and game agencies,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup>Chester, <u>Agencies Utilizing Airborne Vehicles</u>, Vol. I, pp. 17-53.

	were
	Puer
	last
	cons
	sist
	of €
	the
	thir
	ques
	rese
	Stat
	info
	effe
	user
	ques
	of t
	Mitz
	eval
	effe
	-
	avai
	just

were excluded from the study. To this list was added Puerto Rico and the Royal Canadian Mounted Police. These last two were included because of historical comparison considerations only.

Each agency was contacted by one mailing which consisted of three separate sections: the first was a letter of explanation which detailed the reason for the study, the second was a personal resume of the researcher and the third was a questionnaire consisting of 31 items. The questions were designed with the help and advice of the research section of the Education Department at Michigan State University. These questions were intended to obtain information concerning the purposes, costs, results, and effectiveness of the use of helicopters as perceived by the users.

#### Proposed Potential of Data

It was also intended that information obtained from questionnaire as well as information obtained in the review of the literature in Chapter II and the information from the Mitre Corporation, would be available to use in preparing evaluation designs for future tests or experiments of effectiveness in crime deterrence and prevention.

And finally, it is intended that such data be available to the training and education of future criminal justice students and practitioners, particularly those who

will rete thir five eval and itpo ter far is c will use the data for continuing research to test and retest all the methods of police patrol.

The author's questionnaire, although it consisted of thirty-one separate items, was actually constructed around five areas which could be the key issues in any attempt at evaluation of a community safety program for future test and experiment. These five areas constitute divisions of importance insofar as any future test program is concerned. Certainly they go directly to the issue of centrality as far as program purpose, process, and impact are concerned.

A method or theory of crime deterrence or prevention is closely allied to these five divisions since all relate to community function at large. These divisions are:

- Demographic--encompassing both the physical and political aspects of the observed community.
- 2. Financial--including community financial involvement in the process of policing and those statistics which might aid in providing ways to search for cost-effectiveness of a helicopter patrol.
- 3. Purpose and utility factors--which is intended to probe for the utilization of helicopters in relation to the purpose for which they were obtained.
- 4. Accountability methods--these questions are aimed at learning how the results of the process are demonstrated through the use of performance and selected crime statistics.

que tic gro emp con a d is and

1

the

5. Evaluation--this group of questions seeks information about effectiveness through the use of selected area crime statistics and the perceived evaluations of the users of helicopters in police patrol.

The questions are not numerically grouped by question-function for the reasons that it was deemed statistically valueless in the face of the possibility that such grouping might lead the respondent to perceive an overemphasis on one or another of the areas probed. It was considered important to convey to respondents that this is a descriptive study which is intended to aid research and is not intended to portray any organization or its methods and results in a critical light.

These are the areas of probe, and the positions of the questions in the questionnaire:

#### • Demographic

- 1. The governmental unit providing <u>salaries</u> for your department is:
  - □
     1. Village
     □
     4. County

     □
     2. City
     □
     5. State

     □
     3. Township
     □
     6. Other

(please specify)

.....

~

Ce

p:

a]

re

98 PI i

di eχ ar fo

in

2. What is the "general description" of your jurisdiction? Name the two most prominent features:

Residential	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Agricultural	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Educational				•	•					•	
Militarv .	•									•	
Governmental	-				-						
Industrial	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Natural Pogo	• 1170	•	(mi	• nin	• ~	•	•	•	•	•	
forestru		es a \	(1111	11 - 11	91						
Torestry,	et	C.)	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Recreation-T	our	ısm	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	

- 3. What is the official population estimate of your jurisdiction?
- 4. What is the total number of miles of public roads and streets (paved and unpaved) and the square miles of land in your entire jurisdiction?

Miles of public roads \_\_\_\_\_\_ Square miles of land \_\_\_\_\_\_

It is important, in any attempt to describe a process, to provide as complete and accurate a view of the physical environment wherein the process operates, especially in regard to the description of a process which is so related to that physical environment by its very nature, as is the helicopter. Obviously, it would be counterproductive to use an airborne vehicle for anti-crime patrol in areas of forest, water, or over very sparsely inhabited districts. On the other hand, this vehicle might be just exactly suitable for search and rescue missions in such areas. The later discussion of feasibility of various uses for this vehicle will also relate to the size of the area in which it is used and the number of people it serves.

	-	•			•	
•	ъ	1 n	an	C	1	al
	-		~ * * *	~	-	~ ~

5. What is the <u>TOTAL</u> budget for your <u>department</u> for the latest fiscal year?

Total budget for the latest year is \$

6. What is the TOTAL budget of your entire city, village, township, or county for the latest fiscal year?

Total budget for the latest year is \$

7. What is the actual number of all officers and civilians in your agency today?

(officers) (civilians)

10. If any helicopters were purchased through L.E.A.A. grants, did or will your department continue the program after expiration of the grant?

Yes	No	
		_

15. What are the rank and salaries of your helicopter pilots?

<u>No</u> .	Rank	Salary

16. What is the total cost of housing your helicopters per year?

- Purpose and Utilization
- 8. How many items of the following mobile patrol equipment does your department own?

Cars	
Cycles	• · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
Scooters	
Planes	
Helicopters	

9. Were any of these mobile items purchased by L.E.A.A. grants?

	Yes (number)	No
Cars		
Cycles		
Scooters		
Planes		
Helicopters		

12. What type and capacity helicopters are in use in your department?



13. How are your department's helicopters utilized? (Please state amount of use in hours per month per unit in average 730 hour month.)

Patrol, general, including searches
Traffic, regular
Traffic, emergency
Medical, mercy, transport, rescue
Personnel transport
Other (please describe briefly)

14. How are your helicopter pilots chosen for duty?

Selected from department, then trained.

Selected pre-trained from department.

- Selected pre-trained from outside department.
- 19. Does your department use helicopters on general patrol during all time shifts?

Yes 🗌	No 🗌	
-------	------	--

20. Do you provide helicopter assistance to other police agencies or other units of government? (Total hours per month per unit.)

No.	Other Police	Other Governments
Units	(hours)	(hours)

21. When using a helicopter in anti-crime patrol, do you use additional surface units to assist, or respond to, the helicopter?

Number of additional surface units per helicopter

СС as 01 ft Qu de ra fa co ur in ab te di Va iz to

Pr

er

.

•

These items are specifically directed toward discovering how the helicopter is being used by police agencies as a deterrent to crime. It is also intended that a status or condition picture might be obtained which will help future evaluators avoid errors caused by lack of validity. Question number 21 points out such a possibility. Some departments, realizing that a helicopter can respond rapidly while on patrol, add surface units to speed up surface unit response to the need of the helicopter for cooperation. The resulting personnel and equipment configuration renders the statistics of that time and area incomparable to statistics of times and areas that are absent these same conditions. The internal validity of any test would be jeopardized by this bias which results from differential selection of respondents for comparisons.

This in turn would adversely affect the external validity of any experiment and render it totally ungeneralizable.<sup>8</sup> A part of any descriptive study should be directed toward the discovery and isolation of those segments of the process which lend themselves, by their very presence, to errors which jeopardize validity.

<sup>8</sup>Campbell, <u>Experimental Research</u>, p. 5.

- Accountability
- 17. In which of the following reporting programs does your department participate?

Yes	No	
		F.B.I. Uniform Crime Report Program
		National Safety Council Annual Traffic Inventory
		L.E.I.N. (Law Enforcement Intelligence Network)

18. Has your department prepared a separate report of helicopter activity?

Monthly		Annually	
Yes	No	Yes	No

24. If your department believes either 22 or 23 above, is there documentation to demonstrate?

Yes	

No	$\square$

26. Has your helicopter program been specifically evaluated as to its relationship to crime?

Yes	No

30. Will you please forward the information sought in questions 18, 24, 26, 27, 28, and 29, as well as this questionnaire (when completed) to the researcher in the enclosed, self-addressed, stamped envelope?

This questionnaire grouping is programmed to demonstrate the importance of locating the source of some statistical methods of accountability. These figures could enable the future evaluator to "get a handle" on the problem of using certain performance statistics as proof of productivity in the purpose or mission of the process while relating these same statistics to the results of using the process. For instance, if a process of building a home is accounted for by adding the total bricks and pounds of mortar used, a favorable result may ensue when compared to other house building efforts using these statistics. But in terms of comfort, convenience, and utility or, final <u>intended result</u>, such statistics and their final results in use, while they may be accurate and scientifically gained, are virtually useless because of their lack of relationship to the purpose.

Realizing that one can win the brick and mortar contest and still have a badly constructed house without comfort, convenience, and utility it then becomes apparent that these statistics must be used only in relationship to those statistics which bear directly on the purpose of the process. This is <u>especially</u> true of accountability use of statistics in the field of criminal justice.

It is briefly notable that the language in questions 24 and 30 may seem out of context because of their phrasing but it is recalled that these are accountability questions and their references to previous questions are in relation to their position in the entire questionnaire.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup>See Appendix A.

	• Evaluation
22.	Does your department believe that the use of the helicopter in anti-crime patrol has reduced street crime?
	Yes No
23.	Does your department believe that helicopter use has reduced any <u>particular</u> category of crime?
	Yes No Category
25.	Does your department consider the helicopter most valuable for:
	Patrol, including search
	Traffic
	Medical, mercy, treamtent, rescue
	Personnel transport
	Other (specify briefly)
27.	Has your program revealed instances in which heli- copter patrol seems to shift the crime to areas outside the patrol perimeter?
	Yes No
28.	Has your helicopter program been evaluated as to cost per mission?
	Yes No
29.	Has your scout car program been evaluated as to cost per mission?
	Yes No
31.	Will you please state briefly the general view of your department toward the use of helicopters in police service?

F.

A STATE OF A STATE

These questions assess the user's view of the value of this patrol procedure. Specifically, these questions probe for indications of any impact on crime attributed by the users to this system of patrol. In any future attempts at evaluation, testing or experimentation will be critical for researchers to know where to locate those items which purport to have the greatest degree of pertinence to evaluation of any cost-effectiveness in relation to crime deterrence and prevention.

In addition to the questionnaire, this study has made extensive use of the material in the Chester study, Volumes I and II (1975) which also made use of a questionnaire to survey police agencies using helicopters and other aircraft. Some of the information obtained by the Chester survey will be combined and collated whenever possible with the data obtained in the present study. The purpose, of course, will be to provide a description of this process that will be as complete and accurate as possible with the use of the data available.

The present study also makes use of test and evaluation reports from the relatively few police agencies which included them as requested in this author's questionnaire. These reports furnish some useful information anent the views of police administrators who are trying to test and evaluate helicopter programs at the same time as they attempt to justify their very existence.

#### Summary

The data collection thus came mainly from three sources:

1. The literature of criminal justice. In this literature the philosophy of the theory of visibility and mobility in police patrol was sought. The literature was used to trace the passing of this theory from early police departments to those of the present day. In addition, this review of the literature pointed up the absence of research into and testing of police patrol methods and theories.

2. A survey conducted for the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration by the Mitre Corporation used a questionnaire address to law enforcement agencies using aircraft in their functions. The author of the present study was granted permission to use the unpublished data received in answers to this questionnaire. This data provided information about helicopter use and capability. The data also furnished valuable cost data as well as views of the users concerning the performance of helicopters.

3. A survey conducted by the author of the present study which probed police users of helicopters by questionnaire. This questionnaire was directed to police agencies which were using helicopters in their regular function. The data from this questionnaire provided information about the areas where these vehicles were being used as well as views of the users about their value in crime deterrence and prevention.

Some evaluative information was obtained in both surveys but in neither case was any evaluative information supported by scientific test.

The two questionnaires covered virtually the entire law enforcement community in the United States. Information from both questionnaires was combined to provide data for many of the tables in Chapter IV.

4. Another source of data was found in the reports from police agencies which purported to test and evaluate their helicopter patrol. Although these data fail to pass the test of validity they go, nevertheless, provide some interesting formulae which might conceivably be of future use in testing and evaluation of police patrol.

The final picture drawn as the result of this study will, hopefully, prove useful to researchers of the future by providing the kinds of data which will lead to methods of evaluation, testing, and proving of certain police patrol theories and methods which might then be adopted and used by police administrators, trainers, and educators to provide a dependable program of crime deterrence and prevention.

#### CHAPTER IV

#### DESCRIPTION OF THE DATA

## Bases for Evaluation

This chapter will describe the data obtained during the study from all sources as described in Chapter III. They also include 113 responses to the Chester<sup>1</sup> survey as well as 75 responses to the author's questionnaire. These responses, when categorized, will not be additive because, in some instances the data bases, though similar, vary because of the approach. The instant study does not consider data from respondents in either study that turned out to be disassociated from police agencies. These data, nevertheless, serve to accurately describe those functions and details with which they deal.

The description of the data gathered in this study begins with a roster of all law enforcement agencies using helicopters. Included with the roster is an inventory of the number of helicopters in use in each agency. This list

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup>Chester, Preliminary Survey of Agencies Utilizing Airborne Vehicles, Vol. II, pp. 15-1579.
also provides specifications, performance, and financial information including cost of operation.

It was deemed useful, indeed necessary, for further research to present a view of what such a vehicle costs to obtain, what it does, and how much it costs to do it. This roster of agencies and inventory of vehicles will be further associated with community and area demographical data in order to complete the picture of the state of the art.

This chapter will also discuss and demonstrate some of the theories and methods of evaluating helicopter patrol effectiveness in the deterrence or prevention of crime which have been, or are now, in use by police agencies.

It is intended that this chapter should describe the setting wherein the researching academician should begin his efforts. In these data is evidence that should be useful in beginning evaluation or in planning action research to test the police theories of visibility and mobility in relation to their effectiveness in deterring or preventing crime.

#### Data from the Past

The National Institute of Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice (1971) presented a report describing how helicopters were being used in support of law enforcement activities as of March 1970. The report has an inventory of helicopters, including capabilities and costs, both initial and operating. This report also includes data concerning police usage of helicopters in relation to the amount of time spent in the various police functions. It is designated as a report which is part of a longer range program designed to evaluate police use of helicopters which intends to include those factors which contribute to effectiveness in law enforcement, surveillance, rapid response time, preventive patrol, and deterrence. These will be coupled with cost, use, maintenance, and other factors for evaluation that is realistic.<sup>2</sup>

It becomes apparent that there exists a wide variety of calculations concerning the use of helicopters which fluctuate from agency to agency. Note, for instance, the difference between the helicopter manufacturers' computation of costs per hour of operation and those of the users.<sup>3</sup> These are virtually not comparable and this factor could develop into one of the primary problems to be solved before evaluation researchers are able to devise any costeffectiveness formulas.

The National Institute report tells that law enforcement agencies have measured helicopter effectiveness in terms of decreased crime rates and numbers of criminals apprehended, but adds that it is not known to what extent

<sup>3</sup>See Tables 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup>National Institute of Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice, <u>The Utilization of Helicopters for Police Air</u> <u>Mobility</u> (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1971).

		Chicago P.D.	Denver P.D.	Forth Worth, City of	Honolulu	Kansas City Mo. P.D.	L.A. County Sheriff	L.A. P.D.	Memphis P.D.	Nassau County P.D., N.Y.	New Jersey State Police	New York City P.D.	New York State Police	Penna. State Police	Pomona, Cal., City of
	Command Post		×			x		x	x		x	×	x	x	x
	Criminal Apprehension														
	High Speed Chase			x		x	x		x		x			x	
	PatrolRural or Vacant Areas			x		x	x				×	×		x	
	PatrolSeasonal Areas in Off Seasons			x		x	x	x			x			x	
	Providing Intercept Direction/Control to Surface Vehicles or Foot Personnel			x		×			×		x			×	
	Response to Alarms					x	×		×	×				×	x
	Road BlockSetup								×		x			×	
	SearchFugitives			×		x	×	x	x		x	×		×	
	SearchVehicles			x	×	x		x	×		×	×		×	
	Stake Out					×		x				x		x	
ţ	SurveillanceActive	x	x		×	x	x	x	×		x	x		×	x
분	SurveillanceCovert	x		×		x	×	x				×	x	x	
OKC.	SurveillanceGeneral	×	x	x	×	x	×	×	×	x	x	x	x	×	x
ENF	SurveillanceRooftop			×		x		x	×			×			
Ş	Tracking Fleeing Suspects			×		x			x		x			x	
1	Narcotics Detection							x				×		×	
	Observation Post			x		x			×		x	x		x	
	Officer Safety			×		x		x	×						
	Preventative Night Patrols with Lights	x	×			×	×		×			×			×
	Riot Control	x	×				 ¥	×	x		×	×		×	
	SecurityValuable Surface Movements							-							
	Transport Prisoners								×						
	Transport Specialists to Crime Scene			~					Ĵ			~			
	VIP Security	^	î	ç			•		-			ç	•	~ ~	
	Voice Control of Ground Events			^			~	Ç	v		~	Ĵ.		Ĵ	v
	Aerial Photography		×	×		•	^	x	Ŷ	×	×	×	x	x	x
	Air Evacuation (Ambulance)		×				¥	×	×	×	×	¥		x	
	Ambulance Escort				¥									*	
	Disaster Warning			v	~			¥	~			v		~	
	Emergency Cargo Transport			~				Ç	^		~	ç	*	v	v
	Pire Detection and Fighting			~		v		Ĵ			Ĵ	ç	^	~	÷
				Ç	Ĵ	Ĵ	•	Ĵ	Ĵ	~	Ĵ	Ç	*	*	Ç
2	SearchPeople Lost			Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ	Ĵ
Ę	Traffic			•	^	*	*			•		•	•	^	^
ึง	haident Trucchischisc														
H	Accident Investigation			×				×	×		×	×			
PUB	Accident Prevention										×	×	x	x	
	Debris and Other Sarety Hazard Removal Assistance			×							×	×			
	NOTOR ABSISTANCE			×				x	x		x	x	×	×	
	Speed Control			x				x			x		×	x	×
	Traffic ControlEmergency							x	x	×	x	×		×	
	Traffic ControlFreeway and Highway			×					x	x	×	×		×	
	Traffic Monitoring			×	×		×	x	×	x	x	×		x	×
	Water Area Datrol			~	~					~		*			

\*Data as of March 1970, National Institute, Utilization of Helicopters for Police Air Mobility, p. 23.

Table 1.--Law Enforcement and Related Missions Performed by Helicopters for Selected Agencies.\*

.

107

.

Ļ

	Annual	Cost @ 600 H	lrs/Yr
Helicopters	Direct Cost	Fixed Cost	Total Cost
Bell 47G-3B-2	\$12,498	\$16,226	\$28,724
Bell 47G-4A	11,412	15,936	27,348
Bell 47G-5	10,032	13,036	23,068
Bell 206A Jet Ranger	21,054	30,450	51,504
Enstrom F-28A	11,220	11,600	22,820
Fairchild Hiller FH-1100	23,226	27,720	50,946
Hughes 300	7,956	9,753	17,709
Hughes 500	15,150	27,250	42,400

Table 2.--Comparative Helicopter Cost Data (Annual Basis).\*

\*Data as of March 1970, National Institute, Utilization of Helicopters for Police Air Mobility, p. 9.

Table 3.--Comparative Helicopter Cost Data (Per Hour Basis).\*

	List Price	Cost Per	Hr @ 600	Hrs/Yr
Helicopters	Basic Aircraft	Direct Cost	Fixed Cost	Total Cost
Bell 47G-3B-2	\$ 55,950	\$20.83	\$27.04	\$47.87
Bell 47G-4A	54,950	19.02	26.56	45.58
Bell 47G-5	44,950	16.72	21.73	38.45
Bell 206A Jet Ranger	105,000	35.09	50.75	85.84
Enstrom F-28A	39,750	18.70	19.33	38.03
Fairchild-Hiller FH-1100	98,000	38.71	46.20	84.91
Hughes 300	33,630	13.26	16.25	29.51
Hughes 500	95,000	25.25	45.42	70.67

\*Data as of March 1970, National Institute, Utilization of Helicopters for Police Air Mobility, p. 45.

Table 4Cost of Heli	copter Patrol Eight Hou	ırs Per Day (Annual	Basis).*	
Helicopter Type	Direct operating Costs (2920 Flying Hours)	Fixed Costs (3 Helicopters)	Helicopter Pilots (8 Pilots)	Total Cost
Bell 47G-3B-2	\$ 60,823	\$48,690	\$88,000	\$197,514
Bell 47G-4A	55,538	47,820	88,000	191,358
Bell 47G-5	48,822	39,120	88,000	175,942
Bell 206A Jet Ranger	102,463	91,350	88,000	281,813
Enstrom F-28A	54,604	34,800	88,000	177,404
Fairchild Hiller FH-1100	113,033	83,160	88,000	284,193
Hughes 300	38,719	29,250	88,000	155,969
Hughes 500	73,730	81,750	88,000	243,480
*Data as of Ma Police Air Mobility, p	rch 1970, National Inst . 73.	itute, Utilization	of Helicopte	rs for

109

1

i

L

helicopter patrols reduced crime or to what extent these patrols merely caused a shift in the location of criminal activities, or to what extent other factors played a part in crime reduction.<sup>4</sup>

This study further notes:

Many aircraft types are ideally suited for some law enforcement tasks, but are inadequate for others. For example, small, economical three-place piston helicopters have proven to be useful in night patrols using high intensity searchlights to illuminate residential, commercial and industrial areas. This same type of helicopter, however, has been left far behind during high speed auto chases. This usually occurred where the pursued vehicle escaped on a highway, traveling into a strong wind.<sup>5</sup>

This report caused the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration to issue guidelines for state planning agencies regarding the procurement of helicopters for law enforcement agencies through grants from that organization. These guidelines provide a view of the perceived purpose and utility of these vehicles because the directive was developed on the basis of comments solicited by L.E.A.A. from a broad range of law enforcement agencies and manufacturers. These guidelines may be of interest and use to future researchers as keys to defining the purpose of such a vehicle.

<sup>4</sup>National Institute, <u>The Utilization of Helicopters</u>, p. vi.

<sup>5</sup>Ibid., p. 34.

This directive was intended for the use of LEAA professionals and state planning agencies and suggests that the uses and functions of helicopters are many and varied:

Function and Utilization of Helicopters.

A. Since the police helicopter is principally employed in the routine day and night patrol function, the suggested missions and equipment specifications contained in this directive are oriented to this function.

Ľ.

- B. Although these guides address the patrol function primarily, agencies are encouraged to consider the application of helicopters to their entire police responsibility.
- C. Additional missions and/or topography, demographic make up, weather factors, etc. peculiar to a particular area of jurisdiction may result in variance to equipment specifications.
- D. This guideline does not establish minimum helicopter utilization rates on the part of the applicant agency.
  - (1) Usage should be dependent on the specific mission performed and may vary considerably according to the type of missions. However, the grant application must include the existing and anticipated workload of incidents lending themselves to the use of helicopters, such as number of hours per year for each of the missions.
  - (2) If an agency feels it is unable to justify a helicopter program alone it is strongly urged to consider a cooperative program with law enforcement agencies from surrounding jurisdictions. Also if an agency cannot justify a helicopter for patrol only; a pro-rata share of the helicopter purchased to fulfill multiple missions is possible.
- <u>Missions</u>. This paragraph details missions commonly performed by helicopters in police departments.

#### A. Patrol

- (1) Routine. Regular and frequent aerial observation of prestudied and selected areas of jurisdiction, primarily performing as the air environment will allow, those activities attendant to the accepted normal police patrol function. It is considered that normally this aerial patrol will be conducted at an altitude 500 to 1000 feet above existing terrain at a speed of 40 to 60 miles per hour and be of approximately 2 hours duration.
- (2) Response to Radio Calls. Appropriate reaction to incidents received through radio information. It is considered the response to emergency incidents will be conducted at maximum cruise speed.

- B. Search and Rescue.
  - Concentrated aerial search for particular persons or vehicles or sites in support of police activities related to crime control.
  - (2) Missing persons.
    - (a) Urban area--concentrated aerial search for particular persons in a metropolitan area (normally concerns missing juveniles).
    - (b) Rural or wilderness areas--concentrated aerial search for particular persons; flying recovered missing and injured persons out of wilderness and uninhabited areas inaccessible to roads.
- C. Emergency Landings. Landing in emergency conditions, when a life or serious injury is at stake, when no ground support is available, when the life or safety of others is not jeopardized by the landing, and when the helicopter and/or its crew will be of great assistance in protecting or saving persons from death and/or serious injury.
- D. Surveillance.
  - (1) Covert--normally conducted at altitudes in excess of normal patrol altitude.
  - (2) Overt--following person or auto without specific altitude considerations.

- E. Investigation of Suspicious Ground/Water Activities. Regular and frequent requirement to investigate for confirmation of suspicious activities, persons, or vehicles, resulting from observation or radio intelligence. Includes detection and/or apprehension of suspects, in coordination with ground units. In waterways or harbor areas, includes investigation or identification of boats or water activities such as thefts and burglaries in or adjacent to harbors.
- F. Pursuit. Air chase of vehicles or persons suspected/confirmed of being involved in crimes or other related activities and the vectoring in of ground personnel to intercept/apprehend.
- G. Control Platform and Personnel/Equipment Delivery.
  - Use as platform to command, control, and coordinate the activities of the police ground forces; particularly at events which draw large crowds and during civil disturbances.

ţ.

(2) Transport of crime specialists (e.g., crime lab personnel) to remote or relatively inaccessible locations or other locations where the situation demands expeditious arrival. Delivery of equipment and services (e.g., illuminating lights, tear gas, photo equipment, etc.) as necessitated.

# Helicopter Specifications.

- A. General.
  - Helicopter should be factory new, with all applicable improvements, service bulletins, and service letters complete and incorporated in the helicopter at the time of delivery, including aircraft and engine log books and FAA approved flight operations manuals.
- B. Speed.
  - Helicopter should be capable of a true air speed of 95 mph at normal patrol altitude (500-1,000 feet).
  - (2) It is recognized that rapid response is a primary advantage of the helicopter. Example variances of this specification are:

- (a) In areas where speeds in excess of 95 mph are frequently attained by pursued automobiles, and where this is a frequent occurrence;
- (b) In metropolitan areas where high speeds are not required, due to the small size and the high number of incidents in the area patrolled;
- (c) To keep the response time for most emergency incidents during patrol to within ten minutes, depending on the size of the patrolled area and the anticipated number of such incidents.
- C. Endurance. Endurance of the aircraft should be at least three hours at normal patrol speeds, at maximum gross weight on take off, and flying at normal patrol altitude.
- D. Useful Load. Helicopter should be capable of the foregoing performance under patrol ready conditions with:
  - (1) Full fuel load
  - (2) Two-man crew (200 pounds per man)
  - (3) Necessary police and avionics equipment installed. This should include:
    - (a) Radios for airport control zones;
    - (b) Police radios compatible with radios in patrol cars;
    - (c) One intercom;
    - (d) One public address system;
    - (e) A steerable searchlight capable of supplying ground illumination of 1.0 footcandles on the ground from 1,000 foot altitude above existing terrain. (This requirement is considered minimal; searchlights with increased capabilities consistent with cost are encouraged);
    - (f) Cabin heater and floats if required.

E. Overall Performance. Helicopter should be capable of sustaining these performance requirements at standard atmosphere extrapolated for the particular area, except for unseasonal extreme density altitude conditions not occurring more than one percent of the year. An analysis of local weather statistics in relation to the helicopter performance data substantiate the candidate helicopter's capability to perform under these conditions.<sup>6</sup>

### The Vehicles

The initial inventory of agencies and their helicopters (Table 5) describes the vehicle by manufacturer and model. The inventory also details, where such information is available, the initial cost of obtaining the helicopter and source of funding.

Additionally, the cost of operating the vehicle is shown, along with a statement from each responding agency, regarding the flight time use of the helicopter. Finally, the inventory describes the capacities and capabilities of each type of vehicle.

It is considered that this kind of information will be necessary to the future researcher who is trying to discover some common denominator characteristics in programming for evaluation of police patrol methods and theories relating to visibility and mobility in deterring or preventing crime. It is also considered that educators will

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup>Law Enforcement Assistance Administration Guideline --G7370.2, <u>Helicopter Procurement</u>, from James T. Devine, Assistant Administrator to LEAA Professional Personnel and State Planning Agencies, July 30, 1973, pp. 2-7.

£.

Table 5.--1976 Inventory of Law Enforcement Agencies Using Helicopters Including Specification Data.

State, Agency	APR N	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (tbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Alabama State Troopers	Bell	TH13	66	75	Military Surplus	No Cost	25	\$ 37.50	2-4	849	259	49-120	2	
	Bell	TH13	67	75	Military Surplus	No Cost	25	37.50	2-4	849	259	49-120	T	e
Escambia County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•	• •	•	• •	•	m	1057	214	73-105	٦	I
Jefferson County Sheriff	Bell	61HO	63	75	Surplus	No Cost	, 09		e	915	212	70-86	Ч	
	Bell	0Н13	65	75	Surplus	No Cost	60		e	915	212	70-86	ч	7
Tuscaloosa Police	Bell	47G	55	72	Surplus	No Cost	42	35.00	e	915	212	70-86	2	
	Bell	47G3B	67	73	Surplus	No Cost	42	38.00	Ē	1057	214	73-105	г	e
Alaska														
State Troopers	Hiller	12E	•	74	Surplus	\$1500	• •		e	608	224	83-94	7	8
Arizona														
Highway Patrol	Bell	206B	72	72	\$155,000	State	100	48.00	ß	1745	299	136-140	7	9
Phoenix Police	Hughes	3000	72	74	54,000	City	80.5	30.00	e	860	202	81-105	٦	
	Hughes	300C	74	74	67,000	City	80.5	30.00	e	860	202	81-105	7	۳
<b>Tucson Police</b>	Hughes	269C	72	72	36,000	City	225	25.00	e	860	202	81-105	7	
	Hughes	269 <b>A</b>	69	74	Surpl <b>us</b> \$500	City	225	25.00	5	560	150	75-90	7	4
California														
Highway Patrol	Fairchild Hiller	FH 1100	69	69	108,000	DOT Grant State	100	66.00	S	1354	302	122-127	7	
	Fairchild Hiller	FH 1100	11	11	125,000	DOT Grant	100	66.00	S	1354	302	122-127	ч	e
Calaveras County Sheriff	Bell	тні зт	•	•	• •	• •		•	2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	г
Imperial County Sheriff	Bell	TH1 3T	67	74	Surplus	County	06	35.00	2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	
	Bell	THI 3T	99	75	Surplus	County	06	35.00	2-4	1127	295	84-105	T	
	Bell	THI 3T	68	75	Surplus	County	06	35.00	2-4	1127	295	84-105	1	e

117

and the second s

•

.

Table 5Continued														
State, Ågency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	load (sdi)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Kern County Sheriff	Hughes	500	17	75	\$ 70,000	County	100	.	Ω	1462	327	135-152	-	
	Bell <sup>a</sup>	47G3B	11	11	63,000	LEAA	100		e	1057	214	73-105	I	2
Los Angeles County Sheriff	Hughes	269B	69	69	40,000	County	54	\$113.00	2	683	150	85-90	Г	
	Hughes	269B	68	68	40,000	County	54	113.00	2	683	150	85-90	7	
	Hughes	269B	65	65	40,000	County	54	113.00	2	683	150	85-90	ч	
	Hughes	269C	73	73	40,000	470 County 530 LEAA	54	113.00	m	860	202	81-105	г	
	Hughes	500	74	75	117,000	County	54	156.00	S	1462	327	135-152	7	
	Bell	47G3B	69	72	67,000	County	54	123.00	•	1057	214	73-105	7	
	Bell	47G3B	69	69	67,000	County	54	123.00	'n	1057	214	73-105	ч	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	72	72	67,000	County	54	123.00	e	1057	214	73-105	٦	
	Bell	47G3B	62	62	67,000	County	54	123.00	e	1057	214	73-105	ч	
	Sikorsky <sup>b</sup>	H- 34	56	72	Surplus	No Cost	54	200.00	18	4725	247	97-122	г	
	Sikorsky	Н-34	57	72	Surplus	No Cost	54	200.00	18	4725	247	97-122	г	
	Sikorsky	H-34	59	75	Surplus	No Cost	54	200.00	18	4725	247	97-122	ч	
	Sikorsky	H-34	60	75	Surplus	No Cost	54	200.00	18	4725	247	97-122	2	17
San Bernardino Sheriff	Hughes	500C	74	74	118,000	75% LEAA 25% Other	300	42.50	ŝ	1445	328	143-152	7	
	Bell	47G3B	11	11	74,000	50% LEAA 25% Other	300	36.00	n	1057	214	73-105	7	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	73	73	74,000	50% LEAA 25% Other	300	36.00	m	1057	214	73-105	ч	S
San Diego County Sheriff	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	11	11	52,000	LEAA	300	35.00	m	1260	340	84-105	2	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G <b>3B</b>	11	11	67,000	LEAA	300	35.00	٣	1057	214	73-105	Г	
	Bell	47G3B	69	74	56,000	LEAA	300	35.00	e	1057	214	73-105	e	9
San Mateo County Sheriff	Hughes	3000	69	70	63,000	County	220	100.00	'n	860	202	81-105	7	7
Sonoma County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	72	72	71,000	LEAA	50	65.00	e	1057	214	73-105	Г	г

AN

.

•

Table 5Continued.														
State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	bao.l (عطا)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Ventura County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	1	71	\$ 60,000	County	. 65	00.06 \$	- m	1057	214	73-105	-	
	Bell	THI 3T	67	73	20,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	65	00.06	2-4	1127	295	84-105	п	7
Anaheim Police	Hughes	269C	70	70	50,000	City	310	47.00	٣	860	202	81-105	ч	T
<b>Costa Mesa Police</b>	Hughes	269C	74	74	56,000	City	250	32.00	m	860	202	81-105	2	7
<b>Glendale</b> Police	Bell	<b>A</b> 7G5A	72	72	55,000	City	123	, • • •	m	1118	222	85-105	г	г
Huntington Beach Police	Hughes	269B	68	69	42,000	City	200	78.00	2	683	150	85-90	ч	
	Bell	47G3B	64	74	10,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	City	200	78.00	m	1057	214	73-105	4	ß
Community Safety Lakewood	Hughes	300B	64	66	40,000	FLEAA	290	28.00	2	683	150	85-90	7	
	Hughes	300C	72	74	51,000	City	290	28.00	٣	860	202	81-105	г	m
Long Beach Police	Bell	47G5A	73	73	55,000	City	300	40.00	m	1118	222	85-105	T	
	Bell	47G2A	67	74	15,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	City	300	40.00	e	886	238	70-100	-	2
Los Angeles Police	Bell	47G4A	64	64	40,000	city	128	59.00	e	1127	295	84-105	Ч	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	68	68	50,500	ci ty	128	59.00	e	1260	340	84-105	7	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	11	11	61,000	city	128	59.00	e	1260	340	84-105	7	
	Bell	206B	67	67	104,000	ci ty	128	104.00	S	1745	299	136-140	ч	
	Bell	206B	71	11	134,500	city	128	104.00	S	1745	299	136-140	<b>F</b>	
	Bell	206A	74	74	181,600	City	128	104.00	2	1705	390	128-150	٢	14
Newport Beach Police	Hughes	3000	70	70	49,600	city	220	33.75	۳	860	202	81-105	7	7
Oakland Police	Hughes	3000	72	72	56,000	City	300	55.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	
	Hughes	300C	74	74	67,000	City	300	55.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	7
Pasadena Police	Enstrom	28-A	69	69	42,000	City	263	62.00	e	720	235	98-112	7	
	Enstrom	28-A	72	72	54,000	city	263	62.00	m	720	235	98-112	-	e
Pomona Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	68	69	57,000	city	208	• • •	٣	1260	340	84-105	r	
	Bell	47G3B	64	75	20,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	City	208	• • •	۴	1057	214	73-105	ч	7

119

1

Ŀ

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Ye <b>ar</b> Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Riverside Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	70	70	\$ 62,000	60% City 40% TFAA	113	\$ 45.00	e	1260	340	84-105	7	7
Colorado														
Adams County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•	• • •			•	ñ	1057	214	73-105	I	Ч
Jefferson County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•		•	• •		e	1057	214	73-105	ч	ч
Pueblo County Sheriff	Bell	THI 3T	•		•	•	•	• •	2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	٦
<b>Aurora</b> Police	Bell	47G3B	•	•	•		• • •		e	1057	214	73-105	T	ч
Denver Police	Bell	47G3B	11	11	68,000	City	75	40.00	m	1057	214	73-105	1	
	Bell	47G3B	73	73	76,000	50% LEAA	75	40.00	e	1057	214	73~105	٦	2
Delaware														
State Police	Bell	206B	75	75	187,000	Insurance Plus 50% State	100	96.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	T	
	Bell <sup>d</sup>	206 <b>a</b>	11	11	150,000			• •	S	1705	390	128-150		٦
District of Columbia														
Washington Police	Bell	47G4A	11	11	58,000	50% LEAA 50% City	207	56.00	e	1127	295	8 <b>4-1</b> 05	г	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	60	72	Surplus	No Cost	207	31.00	m	886	238	70-100	T	
	Bell	47G3B	68	74	Surplus	No Cost	207	59.00	e	1057	214	73-105	ч	m
Florida														
Brevard County Sheriff	Bell	TH1 3T	•	•	• • •		• •	•	2-4	1127	295	84-105	I	ч
Broward County Sheriff	Bell	47G5A	73	73	62,500	50% LEAA 50% County	80	38.00	m	1118	222	85-105	T	r
Collier County Sheriff	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	•	•	•		• •	• •	e	1057	214	73-105	-1	Ч
Dade County Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	72	72	<b>59,</b> 000	County	250	25.00	ñ	1057	214	73-105	5	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	69	74	Surplus	No Cost	250	24.00	m	1057	214	73-105	I	m

たけ

State, Agency	MER	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
DeKalb County Police	Hugh es	300C	73	73	\$ 46,000	90% LEAA 10% County	150	\$ 38.00	m	860	202	81-105	2	5
<b>Atlanta Police</b>	Hughes	269B	11	11	45,000	90% LEAA 10% City	300	34.00	2	683	150	85-90	ŗ	
	Hughes	269C	73	73	55,000	90% LEAA 10% City	300	34.00	e	860	202	81-105	e	4
<b>Columbus</b> Police	Hughes	269C	72	72	58,000	City	70	• •	e	860	202	81-105	г	г
Hawaii														
Maui County Police	Hiller	OH 323G	•	•		• •	•	• • •	e	927	197	82-95	7	2
Honolulu Police	Hughes	3000	70	11	57,000	City	259	40.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	
	Hugh es	3000	11	73	67,500	City	259	40.00	e	860	202	81-105	1	7
Illinois														
<b>Chicago</b> Police	Bell	47G4A	68	68	54,000	City	95		e	1127	295	84-105	2	7
Indiana														
State Police	Bell	206A	69	69	105,000	State	150	35.00	S	1705	390	128-150	г	
	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	70	70	105,000	State	150	35.00	S	1705	390	128-150	4	
Allen County Sheriff	Bell	TH-13	•	•	•	• •			2-4	849	259	49-120	г	п
Decatur County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•	•	• •	• • •		۳	1057	214	73-105	T	I
Howard County Sheriff	Hiller	OH23G	63	72	Surplus	No Cost	7	35.00	m	927	197	82-95	ч	
	Hiller	OH 23G	64	72	Surplus	No Cost	٢	35.00	e	927	197	82-95	T	2
Marion County Police	Bell	206 <b>a</b>	68	68	95,000	County	86	50.00	ŝ	1705	390	128-150	ı	
	Bell	4765	99	11	35,000	County	96	26.00	e	1260	340	84-105	I	7
Porter County Sheriff	Bell	TH13T	•	•					2-4	1127	295	84-105	Г	r
Gary Police	Hughes	269 <b>A</b>	62	71	Lease	City	125	30.00	2	560	150	75-90	Ч	
	Hughes	269B	11	73	20,000	City	125	30.00	7	683	150	85-90	Ч	7

.н.

.

.

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No	Total
Hillsborough County Sheriff	Hughes	500	:						s	1462	327	135-152	-	-
Lee County Sheriff	Hiller	UH12D	•					• • •	e	541	224	83-94	r	ч
Leon County Sheriff	Bell	THI 3T	•	•			• •		2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	٦
Marion County Sheriff	Bell	THI 3T	•	•		• •	• • •	• • •	2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	г
Orange County Sheriff	Sikorsky	S55B	54	72	\$ 28,000	County	166	\$ 95.00	12	2250	370	85-101	T	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	65	73	10,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	166	60.00	m	886	238	70-100	7	e
Palm Beach County Sheriff	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	70	70	98,000	County	150	67.00	ŝ	1705	990	128-150	Г	I
Pasco County Sheriff	Hiller	12E	•	73	Surplus	No Cost	20	35.00	'n	608	224	83-94	Г	ч
Pinell <b>as</b> County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	68	73	24,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	107	27.00	m	1057	214	73-105	7	
	Bell	47G5A	73	73	53,000	75% LEAA 25% County	107	27.00	m	1118	222	85-105	п	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G	54	20	12,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	107	27.00	m	915	212	70-86	Ч	4
St. Lucie County Sheriff	Hughes	TH55	67	74	7,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	<b>4</b> 0	20.00	e	662	177	66-86	1	T
Jacksonville Sheriff	Bell	47G	56	72	12,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	300	32.00	£	915	212	70-86	4	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G	66	75	20,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	300	32.00	m	915	212	70-86	7	Q
Tampa Police	Hughes	269B	70	70	46,000	City	150	30.00	7	683	150	85-90	ľ	
	Hughes	3000	74	74	62,000	City	150	35.00	e	860	202	81-105	7	e
Georgia														
State Police	Bell	47G3B	64	74	Loan Surplus	No Cost	100	30.00	m	1057	214	73-105	10	10

					Cost	Source	Flight	Total						ł
State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	of Vehicle	of Payment	Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Indianapolis Police	Hughes	269C	73	73	\$ 56,000	LEAA	250		m	860	202	81-105	~	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	57	73	9,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	City	250	•	e	1057	214	73-105	ч	e
Iowa														
Cedar Rapids Police	Hiller	12-C	55	72	Surplus	No Cost	75	\$ 32.00	e	608	224	83-94	7	
	Hiller	12-C	56	72	Surplus	No Cost	75	32.00	e	608	224	83-94	7	4
Kansas														
Rush County Sheriff	Bell	THI 3T	•	•	• •	• •	• •		2-4	1127	295	84-105	ч	ч
Stanton County Sheriff	Bell	TH1 3T	•	•	•	•		•	2-4	1127	295	<b>84-1</b> 05	1	ı
Kansas City Police	Hughes	3000	11	11	43,000	LEAA	100	• • •	m	860	202	81-105	T	
	Hughes	300C	75	75	65,000	City	100	•	m	860	202	81-105	T	2
Topeka Police	Hughes	3000	72	72	47,500	70% LEAA 30% City	130	33.00	m	860	202	81-105	r	
	Hughes	300C	74	75	50,000	90% LEAA 10% City	130	33.00	m	860	202	81-105	T	5
Wichita Police	Hugh es	269C	72	72	59,000	City	230	44.00	e	860	202	81-105	г	
	Hughes	269C	73	73	63,000	60% LEAA 40% City	230	44.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	7
Kentucky														
Jefferson County Police	Hugh es	3000	11	72	60,000	LEAA	150	32.00	m	860	202	81-105	ч	
	Hughes	3000	74	74	67,000	LEAA	150	32.00	Ē	860	202	81-105	1	
	Hughes	269 <b>A</b>	66	75	Surplus	No Cost	150	32.00	2	560	150	85-90	1	۳
Louisiana														
State Police	Fairchild	FH1100	69	69	100,000	NHTSA	240	85.00	ъ	1354	302	122-127	7	
	Bell	20611B	74	74	142,000	State	240	100.00	S	1745	299	136-140	٦	
	Bell	206IIB	75	75	158,000	State	240	100.00	S	1745	299	136440	ŗ	4
Jefferson Parish Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•			• •	• • •	m	1057	214	73-105	7	7

										Contraction of the local division of the loc				
State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi )	Speed MPH	No.	Total
St. Charles Parish Sheriff	Bell	THI3M	•			• • •			~	1127	295	84-105	-	-
St. Bernard Parish Sheriff	Bell	47G	•		• • •		•		m	915	212	70-86	г	T
St. Tammany Parish Shériff	Bell	HI 3E	•	•	•	•	•	•	m	915	212	70-86	Г	r
Terrebonne Parish Sheriff	Bell	TH I 3T	•	•	•	•	•	•	2-4	1127	295	<b>84-1</b> 05	Ч	r
Maryland														
State Police	Bell	206B	73	73	\$157,900	State	53	\$ 57.00	S	1745	299	136-140	7	
	Bell	206B	74	74	157,900	State	53	57.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	г	
	Bell	206B	75	75	189,600	State	53	57.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	T	
	Sikorsky	нн 34.J	•	74	Surplus	No Cost	53	184.00	18	4725	247	97-122	7	9
Baltimore Police	Fairchild	FH1100	70	70	132,000	50% LEAA 50% City	333	36.00	ŝ	1354	302	122-127	1	
	Hughes	3000	11	11	50,000	LEAA	333	28.00	e	865	202	81-105	7	
	Hughes	3000	73	73	52,900	LEAA	333	28.00	e	865	202	81-105	2	
Massachusetts														
State Police	Bell	206B	69	69	138,000	State	100	68.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	ч	ч
Michigan														
State Police	Bell	206A	70	74	105,000	State	100	60.00	2	1705	390	128-150	г	
	Hiller	UH2 3D	59	11	Loan Surplus	No Cost	100	48.00	۳.	927	197	82-95	7	
	Hiller	UH23D	61	11	Loan Surplus	No Cost	100	48.00	e	927	197	82-95	7	Ś
Genesee County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	64	74	20,000 <sup>C</sup>	County	100	29.00	e	1057	214	73-105	m	ñ
					Surplus									
Oakland County Sheriff	Enstrom	F28A	69	69	47,500	County	150	55.00	e	720	235	98-112	ı	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	57	72	HEW Surplus	No Cost	150	75.00	£	886	238	70-100	7	m

<u>. .</u>

Ŀ

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Wayne County Sheriff	Hughes	300C	73	73	Lease \$ 21,000 yr. each	LEAA	125	\$ 37.00	- m	860	202	81-105	~	~
Detroit Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	11	72	22,000	City	76	27.00	e	1260	340	84-105	7	
	Bell	47G5A	•	73	106,000	LEAA	76	27.00	e	1118	222	85-105	4	9
Flint Políce	Flint Uses	s and Sha	res Cos	st of Genes	see County F	ielicopter S	iervice							
Lansing Police	Hughes	269A	68	74	CD Loan	No Cost	150	38.00	2	560	150	75-90	2	
	Hughes	269B	74	74	55,000	90% LEAA 5% City 5% State	150	42.00	7	683	150	85-90	Г	m
Warren Police	Hiller	OH2 3D	58	73	CD Surplus	No Cost	240	50.00	۳	608	224	83-94	ч	
	Hiller	0Н23D	63	73	CD Surplus	No Cost	240	50.00	٣	608	224	83-94	г	
Minnesota	Hiller	OH2 3D	. 64	73	CD Surplus	No Cost	240	50.00	۳	608	224	83-94	T	m
State Patrol	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	64	74	Surplus	No Cost	160	20.00	e	886	238	70-100	7	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	99	74	Surplus	No Cost	160	20.00	m	886	238	70-100	I	
	Bell	47G4A	69	69	<b>69,</b> 000	State	160	30.00	m	1127	295	84-105	T	4
Mississippi														
Highway Patrol	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	57	72	Loan Surplus	No Cost	35	35.00	٣	886	238	70-100	٦	
	Bell	47G3B	65	65-73	Loan Surplus	No Cost	35	35.00	e	1057	214	73-105	4	
	Bell	206	62	73	Loan Surplus	No Cost	35	50.00	ß	1705	390	128-150	г	9
Harrison County Sheriff	Bell	нетн	•	•	•			•	m	1144	238	87-105	г	I
<b>Jackson Police</b>	Bell	47G5A	72	72	47,800	LEAA	100		٣	1118	222	85-105	न	г
Natchez Police	Bell	47G3B	•	•	•		• •	•	٣	1057	214	73-105	I	Г
Missouri														
State Hwy Patrol	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	59	59	42,500	50% CD 50% State	50	28.00	e	886	238	70-100	ч	ч

Manipulation and the state of t

•
75
¥
2
c
÷.
5
0
~
Ý
ŝ
•••
e
÷.
~
-

Table 5Continued.														
State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
St. Charles County Sheriff	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	68	74	Loan Surplus	No Cost	108		m	1057	214	73-105	-	-
St. Louis County Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	69	72	\$ 65,000	County	250	\$ 31.00	m	1260	340	84-105	T	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	70	73	65,000	County	250	31.00	m	1260	340	84-105	T	
	Bell	THI 3T	•	75	Surplus	No Cost			2-4	1127	295	84-105	2	4
Kansas City Police	Hughes	300B	68	68	39,000	city	300	30.00	2	683	150	85-90	e	
	Hughes	3000	70	70	47,000	60% LEAA 40% City	300	30.00	e	860	202	81-105	e	9
Sikeston Police	Bell	THI 3T	•	•	•	•	•	•	2-4	1127	295	84-105	ч	г
Nebraska														
State Police	Bell	206B	68	70	88,000	Fed. Hwy Funds	35	120.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	1	Ч
Lancaster									,					
County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	64	73	Loan Surplus	No Cost	õ	13.00	<b>m</b> .	1057	214	73-105	-	-
Lincoln Police	Bell	47G3B	68	11	41,000	15% LEAA 85% City	06	19.00	m	1057	214	73-105	Ч	r
Nevada														
Las Vegas Police	Hughes	3000	70	70	37,000	City	225	38.00	٣	860	202	81-105	٦	
	Hughes	3000	11	72	47,000	LEAA	225	38.00	e	860	202	81-105	г	2
New Jersey														
State Police	Fairchild	FH1100	69	69	108,200	State	200	167.00	2	1354	302	122-127	1	
	Bell	206B	11	11	144,000	State	200	137.00	S	1745	299	136-140	٦	
	Bell	206B	72	72	153,000	State	200	137.00	5	1745	<b>2</b> 99	136-140	1	
	Bell	206B	73	73	153,000	State	200	137.00	2	1745	299	136-140	٦	
	Bell	<b>2</b> 06B	75	75	173,500	State	200	137.00	2	1745	299	136-140	Ч	5
New York														
State Police	Bell	206A	69	69	150,000	90% NHTSA 10% State	60	75.00	ŝ	1705	390	128-150	m	
	Bell	47G4A	68	68	54,500	State	60	35.00	e	1127	295	84-105	٦	4

.

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Chataugua County Sheriff	Hiller	OH 2 3G	63	73	Surplus	No Cost	20	\$ 50.00		927	197	82-95	-	
·	Hiller	OH23G	63	74	Surplus	No Cost	20	50.00	ñ	927	197	82-95	1	2
Nassau County Police	Fairchild	<b>FH1100</b>	69	72	\$ 65,000	County	159	40.00	ŝ	1354	302	122-127	г	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	64	73	\$500 Surplus	County	159	45.00	m	1057	214	73-105	Ч	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	65	73	\$500 Surplus	County	159	45.00	m	1057	214	73-105	ı	e
Onondaga County Sheriff	Hiller	OH 2 3 D	59	73	Surplus	No Cost	130	42.00	e	608	224	83-94	7	
	Hiller	OH 2 3D	62	73	Surplus	No Cost	130	42.00	e	608	224	83-94	г	m
Rockland County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•				• •		m	1057	214	73-105	г	1
Suffolk County Police	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	70	70	138,000	County	60	175.00	S	1705	390	128-150	г	
	Bell	206B	72	72	148,500	County	60	175.00	2	1745	299	136-140	٦	2
Metro Transit Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G4	•	•	• •		•		m	1127	295	84-105	Г	ı
New York City Police	Bell	206A	68	68	150,000	City	300	102.00	S	1705	<b>39</b> 0	128-150	Г	
	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	69	69	150,000	City	300	102.00	2	1705	390	128-150	٦	
	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	72	72	150,000	City	300	102.00	2	1705	390	128-150	ч	
	Bell	206B	73	73	158,000	City	300	102.00	2	1745	299	136-140	ч	
	Bell	47J2A	65	65	45,000	City	300	110.00	4	1210	275	87-105	п	
	Bell	47G4	70	70	35,000	City	300	110.00	٣	1127	295	84-105	н	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G4	71	11	35,000	City	300	110.00	e	1127	295	84-105	Ч	٢
North Carolina														
Highway Patrol	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	71	11	132,000	State	52	100.00	5	1705	390	128-150	7	7
Dare County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	•	•		•	• •		m	1057	214	73-105	I	1
Charlotte Police	Bell	47G5	11	11	64,200	LEAA	127	27.00	e	1260	340	84-105	г	г

F

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	<b>Year</b> Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
<u>Ohio</u> Highway Patrol	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	70	70	\$147,300	NHTSA	8	\$ 65.00	ν	1705	390	128-150	~	~
Allen County Sheriff	Bell	TH13T	:	•	• •		• •	• • •	2-4	1127	295	84-105	T	Ч
Wayne County Sheriff	Bell	TH I 3T	•	•		• •	• •		2-4	1127	295	84-105	ч	I
Columbus Police	Hughes	269C	11	11	42,300	75% LEAA 25% City	116	63.00	۴	860	202	81-105	7	
	Hughes	269C	72	72	45,600	City	116	63.00	e	860	202	81-105	г	
	Hughes	269C	75	75	50,400	City	116	63.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	4
Kettering Police	Hughes	3000	69	69	48,000	75% LEAA 25% Citv	168	• •	e	860	202	81-105	7	2
Ok Lahoma														
Oklahoma City Police	Hughes	300C	74	74	61,500	LEAA	100	15.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	г
Pennsylvania										,				
State Police	Bell	206B	11	11	135,000	40% LEAA 60% State	83	75.00	2	1745	299	136-140	7	
	Bell	206B	70	72	135,000	40% LEAA 60% State	83	75.00	'n	1745	299	136-140	г	
	Bell	206B	72	73	135,000	40% LEAA 60% State	83	75.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	Г	
	Bell	<b>2</b> 06B	11	72	135,000	40% LEAA 60% State	83	75.00	ŝ	1745	299	136-140	3	Q
Horsham Township Police	Bell	47G3B	•	•					£	1057	214	73-105	1	Ŧ
Newton Township Police	Aero- Spatiale	Gazell	11	72	• •		40	80.00	2	1748	195	144-192	T	Ч
Rhode Island														
State Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7D1	50	60	6,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	State	30	35.00	•	•	•	• • •	Г	
	Bell	47K	54	68	6,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	State	30	35.00	•	•		• •	ı	7

128

.

ţ.

and the second second

ð	
ā	1
Ċ	
-74	
ند	
Ċ	
ā	
Ō	
ĩ	
i	
٠.	
ŝ	
60	1
Ä.	1
ف	
Ĥ.	

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Ids)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
South Carolina														
Highway Patrol	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G	•	•	• •	• • •			m	915	212	70-86	7	
	Bell	206	•		• •		• • •		5	1705	<b>390</b>	128-150	٦	m
Darlington County Sheriff	Bell	ТНІ ЗТ	:		•	•	• •	• • •	2-4	849	259	49-120	ч	T
South Dakota														
Sioux Falls Police	Bell	TH 1 3T	•	•		• • •			2-4	1127	295	84-105	г	г
Tennessee														
Dept. of Safety	Bell	47G2	57	57	\$ 40,000	State	25	\$ 17.00	m	886	238	70-100	T	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	58	58	40,000	State	25	17.00	e	886	238	70-100	Г	
	Bell	47G3B	68	74	14,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	State	25	17.00	e	1057	214	73-105	4	Q
Knoxville Police	Bell	THI 3T	•	•			• • •	• • •	2-4	1127	295	84-105	ı	
	Bell	HI3G	•	•		• • •			e	915	212	70-86	Г	7
Lewisburg Police	Bell	TH13T	•	•	• •		• •	• •	2-4	1127	295	84-105		٦
Memphis Police	Bell	47	67	73	CD Surplus	No Cost	50	55.00	e	915	212	70-86	4	
	Bell	47	69	69	63,000	City	50	55.00	e	915	212	70-86	ı	
	Bell	206 <b>A</b>	70	70	133,000	NHTSA	50	63.00	5	1705	390	128-150	ч	9
Nashville Police	Bell	47G3B	•	•	• •	• •	• •	• • •	m	1057	214	73-105	4	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G	•	•	• •		• •		m	915	212	70-86	٦	\$
Texas														
Department Public Safety	Bell	206 <b>a</b>	69	69	112,700	State	284	100.00	ŝ	1705	390	128-150	T	
	Bell	206A	70	70	138,800	State	284	100.00	S	1705	390	128-150	7	
	Bell	206B	69	69	112,700	State	284	100.00	S	1745	299	136-140	٦	
	Bell	206B	72	72	151,500	State	284	100.00	S	1745	299	136-140	٦	ŝ
Bexar County Sheriff	Hughes	269C	70	75			34	32.00	e	860	202	81-105	ч	Г
Ector County Sheriff	Bell	THI 3T	•	•	• •	• •	• •		2-4	1127	295	84-105	ч	r

T
- Ă
×.
2
2
-
- 64
0
Ō
Ť
•
ŝ
w.
-
۹

Table 5Continued.														
State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Harris County Sheriff	Hughes	269C	12	22	\$ 68,500	County	400	00.9E \$		860	202	81-105	-	
	Hughes	269C	75	75	65,000	LEAA	400	39.00	e	860	202	81-105	7	۳
McLennan County Sheriff	Bell	47G3B	68	75	23,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	County	35	30.00	m	1057	214	73-105	г	Ч
Dallas Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	69	69	53,800	city	70	56.00	e	1260	340	84-105	T	
	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G5	71	17	53,800	City	70	56.00	e	1260	340	84-105	7	
	Bell	47G5A	72	72	52,000	LEAA	70	56.00	٣	1118	222	85-105	٣	
	Bell	47G3B	63	73	Surplus	No Cost	70	• • •	٣	1057	214	73-105	1	
	Bell	47G3B	65	73	Surplus	No Cost	70		e	1057	214	73-105	1	
Fort Worth Police	Bell	47G4A	•	•	• •		• • •	• • •	e	1127	295	84-105	7	2
Harlingen Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G2	•	•		• •		• • •	Ē	886	238	70-100	Ч	٦
Houston Police	Hughes	269C	72	72	62,000	City	68	50.00	e	860	202	81-105	e	
	Hughes	269C	74	74	62,000	City	68	50.00	e	860	202	81-105	4	
	Hughes	269C	75	75	62,000	city	68	50.00	e	860	202	81-105	4	11
<b>Pasadena Pol</b> ice	Hughes	3000	72	72	58,000	75% LEAA 25% City	80	29.00	£	860	202	81-105	T	٦
San Antonia Police	Hughes	269C	11	11	45,000	50% LEAA 50% City	120	34.00	ñ	860	202	81-105	ч	
	Hughes	269C	74	75	50,000	City	120	34.00	e	860	202	81-105	г	7
Utah														
Salt Lake Police	Hiller	OH23D	59	73	\$ 300 Surplus	LEAA	85	40.00	m	608	224	83-94	Ч	ч
<u>Virginia</u>														
State Police	Fairchild	FH1100	•	•	•	• • •		•	2	1354	302	122-127	7	7
Danville Police	Bell	THI 3T	•	•	• •		• • •	• • •	2-4	1127	295	84-105	1	Ļ
Norfolk Police	Bell	47G3B	•	•	•	•	•	• • •	e	1057	214	73-105	7	7
Portsmouth Police	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	66	74	Lo <b>an</b> Surpl <b>us</b>	No Cost	<b>4</b> 0	50.00	m	1057	214	73-105	1	1
Richmond Police	Hughes	269C	72	72	124,000	60% LEAA 40% City	139	18.00	m	860	202	81-105	7	7

Ŀ

State, Agency	MFR	Model	Year MFR	Year Obtained	Cost of Vehicle	Source of Payment	Flight Time Per Mo. (Hrs)	Total Cost Per Hr.	Places	Load (Lbs)	Range (Mi.)	Speed MPH	No.	Total
Virginia Beach Police	Bell	47G3B							۳.	1057	214	73-105	7	~
<u>Mashington</u> Chelan City Sheriff	Bell	47G3B		:			•		e	1057	214	73-105	ч	Ч
Snoho <b>mí</b> sh County Sheriff	Bell	<b>4</b> 7G3B	•	•	• •	• •	• • •	• •	m	1057	214	73-105	m	m
Seattle Police	Hughes	269C	11	11	\$ 56,000	City	200	\$ 60.00	e	860	202	81-105	٦	
	Hugh es	269C	72	72	64,000	LEAA	200	60.00	e	860	202	81-105	٦	7
dest Virginia State Police	Bell	206	73	73	160,000	DOT	60	84.00	ŝ	1705	390	128-150	1	
	Hiller	12E	63	74	24,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	State	60	52.00	£	608	224	83-94	Г	
	Hiller	12E	64	75	21,000 <sup>C</sup> Surplus	State	60	52.00	۴	608	224	83-94	1	m
<u>Misconsin</u> Sauk City Sheriff	Hiller	OH23G	64	73	Surplus	No Cost	<b>б</b>	• •	•	•	:	• •	г	г
<u>Puerto Rico</u> Puerto Rico Police	Fairchild	FH1100	64	73	Surplus	No Cost	6	• •	Ś	1354	302	122-127	5	N
<u>Canada</u> Royal Canadian Mounted Police	Bell	212	64	73	Surplus	No Cost	თ	• •	10	:	•	• •	Г	
	Bell	206B	49	73	Surplus	No Cost	6		Ω	1745	299	136-140	~	4

NOTE: Abbreviations used above--(1) CD = Civil Defense; (2) LEAA = Law Enforcement Assistance Administration; (3) NHTSA = National Highway Traffic Safety Association; (4) DOT = Department of Transportation.

<sup>a</sup>Crashed 5-75

<sup>b</sup>only 3 Sikorskys will operate in 1976

<sup>C</sup>Cost of Modification

d206A wrecked February 1975

.

A

to an and the second se

Table 6 is a more concise inventory which demonstrates the number of helicopters in use by police agencies according to manufacturer and model. Coupled with the data in Table 5, the information should be of interest in evaluation of the program since it lends itself readily to capability comparisons.

## Frequency of the Use of Helicopters in Patrol

Table 7 illustrates the amount of flying time the various kinds of police agencies are logging in the use of helicopters. Any attempt at evaluation of this patrol procedure must necessarily consider such data when trying to measure impact on crime.

This information will also relate to a later section of this chapter which discusses certain problems in helicopter programs which reflect directly on an agency's ability to keep helicopters in the air and weighs on the effectiveness of these vehicles as patrol tools in deterrence or prevention of crime.

Table 8 demonstrates the division of flying time between daytime and nighttime hours in state, county, and local agencies. These data illustrate that a majority of flight time in helicopter programs is carried on during daylight hours. This tendency is very heavy in state

Manufact	urer	and Model	Total Number in Use
Bell	47	Series	166
	206	Series	60
	TH13	Series	26
H and	а он	Series	6
Hiller	ОН	Series	14
	UH	Series	14
Sikorsky	HH	34J	2
	Н34	4	3
	551	В	1
Aerospat	iale	Gazell	1
Enstrom	F282	A	4
Fairchild	d-Hi	ller FH1100	8
Hughes	269	Series	54
	300	Series	41
	500	Series	4
	тн	55	2

Table 6.--Inventory of Helicopters Used by State, County, and Local Police Agencies by Manufacturer and Model.\*

\*As of December 1975, information from respondents' replies to questionnaires in Chester Survey and this author's study.

-						
				Hours		
Agencies	0- 75**	76- 150**	151 <b>-</b> 225	225- 300	301- 500***	Over 500***
State	8	6	4	3	3	0
County	8	9	9	3	2	1
Local	3	21	10	10	2	4
Total	19	36	23	16	7	5

Table	7Distribution	of	Flying	Time	in	Sample	Agencies	by
	Average Hours	s Pe	er Montl	n.*				

\*As of December 1975, respondents' replies in data from Chester Survey and author study.

\*\*Note that 51 percent of all sampled police agencies using helicopters are recording flight times of less than 150 hours per month.

\*\*\* All police agencies recording over 300 hours per month flight time are included in the sampling.

Agongu	Total Hrs Per Mo	Dayti	me Flight	Nighttime Flight		
Адепсу		Hours	<pre>% of Total</pre>	Hours	% of Total	
State	2100	1852	88	248	12	
County	3400	2120	62	1280	38	
Local	5000	2594	52	2406	48	
All Agencies	10,500	6566	62.5	3934	37.5	

Table 8.--Temporal Distribution of Flying Time in Sample Agencies by Average Hours Per Month.\*

\*As of December 1975, data from respondents' replies in Chester Survey and author study. agencies, heavy in the counties, and in the clear majority in local police agencies. Since crime statistics in urban areas show that crimes like rape, assault, robbery, and burglary occur more frequently during night hours, this portion of the data may bear directly on the effectiveness of helicopter patrol in crime deterrence and prevention.<sup>7</sup>

Another area of exploration for evaluation and testing lies in the information concerning the size and population of the area where a process such as helicopter patrol is being used. The assumed direct relationship between visibility and mobility and crime deterrence and prevention has been detailed throughout this study. The size and population density in any area patrolled by helicopters should prove to be important to use in research. The area size and density data of sample respondents in those places patrolled by helicopter is shown in Table 9.

<sup>7</sup>Cf. Detroit Police Department Annual Report, 1974, p. 39.

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Below 10	0,000		
<u>Counti</u>	es		
Alab	ama		
1.	Escambia County Sheriff	962	36
<u>Cali</u>	fornia		
2.	Calaveras County Sheriff	1024	62
3.	Imperial County Sheriff	4241	18
Flor	rida		
4.	Collier County Sheriff	2006	19
5.	Marion County Sheriff	1600	43
6.	Pasco County Sheriff's Department	742	102
7.	St. Lucie County Sheriff's Office	584	87
Hawa	<u>ii</u>		
8.	Maui County Police Department	1173	39
Indi	ana		
9.	Decatur County Sheriff	370	61
10.	Howard County Sheriff	293	284
11.	Porter County Sheriff	425	205
Kans	as		
12.	Rush County Sheriff	724	7
13.	Stanton County Sheriff	676	3
Loui	siana		
14.	St. Bernard Parish Sheriff Department	514	100
15.	St. Charles Parish Sheriff	294	101
16.	St. Tammany Parish Sheriff's Department	887	72
17.	Terrebonne Sheriff Department	1368	56
Miss	ouri		
18.	St. Charles County Sheriff's Department	551	169

Table 9.--Counties and Localities Using Helicopters in Law Enforcement Activities by Population, Area Size, and Density.

Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Montana	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	<b></b>
19. Flathead County Sheriff	5137	8
North Carolina		
20. Dare County Sheriff	391	18
Ohio		
21. Wayne County Sheriff	561	155
South Carolina		
22. Darlington County Sheriff	543	98
South Dakota		
23. Minnehaha County Sheriff	813	117
Texas		
24. Ector County Sheriff	907	101
Washington		
25. Chelan County Sheriff	2918	14
Wisconsin		
26. Sauk County Sheriff's Department	841	46
Localities		
Alabama		
1. Tuscaloosa Police Department	27.4	2400
California		
2. Costa Mesa Police Department	15.2	4780
3. Newport Beach Police Department	12.0	4119
4. Pomona Police Department	22.6	3867
Colorado		
5. Aurora	27.2	2756
Mississippi		
6. Natchez Police Department	• •	• •
Missouri		
7. Sikeston Police Department	• •	• •
Ohio		
8. Kettering Police Department	18.3	3927

k

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Penn	<b>sylvania</b>		
9.	Horsham Township Police	• •	• •
10.	Newtown Township Police	• •	• •
Tenn	essee		
11.	Lewisburg Police Department	• •	• •
Texa	<u>s</u>		
12.	Harlingen Police Department	22.5	1489
13.	Pasadena Police Department	35.4	2522
<u>Virg</u>	inia		
14.	Danville Police Department	16.7	2778
100,000	to 200,000		
<u>Counti</u>	es		
Colo	rado		
1.	Adams County Sheriff	1237	150
2.	Pueblo County Sheriff	2405	49
<u>Flor</u>	ida		
3.	Lee County Sheriff	785	134
4.	Leon County Sheriff	670	154
Miss	issippi		
5.	Harrison County Sheriff	585	23
Nebr	aska		
6.	Lancaster County Sheriff's Department	845	199
New	York		
7.	Chautauqua County Sheriff's Department	1081	136
Ohio			
8.	Allen County Sheriff	410	271
Texa	S		
9.	McLennan County Sheriff's Department	1000	148

-

.

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Locali	ties		
<u>Cali</u>	fornia		
1.	Anaheim Police Department	33.3	5006
2.	Glendale Police Department	29.4	4515
3.	Huntington Beach Police Depart- ment	29.6	4359
4.	Pasadena Police Department	22.7	4992
5.	Riverside Police Department	71.5	1952
Geor	gia		
6.	Columbus Police Department	69.5	2218
Indi	ana		
7.	Gary Police Department	42.0	4177
Iowa			
8.	Cedar Rapids Police Department	50.7	2182
Kans	as		
9.	Kansas City Police Department	56.8	2961
10.	Topeka Police Helicopter Unit	47.5	2632
Mich	nigan		
11.	Flint Police Department	32.8	5894
12.	Lansing Police Department	33.4	3939
13.	Warren Police Department	34.2	5242
Miss	<b>iss</b> ippi		
14.	Jackson Police Department	50.2	3076
Nebi	caska		
15.	Lincoln Police Department	49.3	3033
Neva	lda		
16.	Las Vegas Police Department	51.6	2438
Tenr	nessee		
17.	Knoxville Police Department	77.0	2267
<u>Utah</u>	<u>1</u>		
18.	Salt Lake City Police Department	59.3	2966

Ą

Ĩ

ļ

		Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
	Virg	inia	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	
	19.	Portsmouth Police Department	29.0	3826
	20.	Virginia Beach Police Department	220.0	782
200	,000	to 500,000		-
Co	ounty	-		
	Cali	fornia		
	1.	County of Kern Sheriff's Department	8152	40
	2.	Sonoma County Sheriff	1604	128
	3.	Ventura County Sheriff	1863	203
	Colo	rado		
	4.	Jefferson County Sheriff	783	301
	Flor	ida		
	5.	Brevard County Sheriff	1011	228
	6.	Hillsborough County Sheriff	1038	472
	7.	Orange County Sheriff Department	910	378
	8.	Palm Beach County Sheriff's Department	2027	173
	Geor	gia		
	9.	De Kalb County Police Department	264	1544
	Indi	ana		
	10.	Allen County Sheriff	671	418
	Loui	siana		
	11.	Jefferson Parish Sheriff Department	369	917
	Mich	nigan		
	12.	Genesse County Sheriff	642	694
	New	York		
	13.	Onondaga County Sheriff's Department	694	596
	14.	Rockland County Sheriff	176	1306
Table 9.--Continued.

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Wash	ington		
15.	Snohomish County Sheriff	2098	126
Locali	ties		
Ariz	ona		
1.	Tucson Police Department	80.0	3287
<u>C</u> ali	fornia		
2.	Lakewood Community Safety Department	9.5	8739
3.	Long Beach Police Department	48.7	7364
4.	Oakland Police Department	53.4	6771
Flor	rida		
5.	Tampa Police Department	84.5	3287
Geor	gia		
6.	Atlanta Police Department	131.5	3779
Hawa	<u>ii</u>		
7.	Honolulu Police Department	83.9	3872
Kans	as		
8.	Wichita Police Department	86.5	3197
Nort	h Carolina		
9.	Charlotte Police Department	76.0	3173
<u>Okla</u>	homa		
10.	Oklahoma City Police Department	635.7	576
Tenn	essee		
11.	Nashville Police Department	508.0	882
Texa	S		
12.	Ft. Worth Police Department	205.0	191 <b>9</b>
Virg	inia		
13.	Norfolk Police Department	53.6	5745
14.	Richmond Police Helicopter Patrol	60.3	4140

Table 9.--Continued.

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
500,000 t	<u>o 1,000,000</u>		
County			
Alaba	ma		
1.	Jefferson County Sheriff's Department	1115	578
Calif	ornia		
2.	San Bernardino County Sheriff	20,117	34
3.	San Mateo Sheriff's Office	447	1245
<u>Flori</u>	da		
4.	Broward County Sheriff	1219	509
5.	Pinellas County Sheriff	265	1971
India	na		
6.	Marion County Sheriff's Department	392	2025
Kentu	cky		
7.	Jefferson County Police	375	1853
Michi	gan		
8.	Oakland County Sheriff's Department	867	1047
Misso	<u>uri</u>		
9.	St. Louis County Police Department	499	1907
Texas			
10.	Bexar County Sheriff	1246	667
Localit	ies		
<u>Arizo</u>	na		
1.	Phoenix Police Department	247.9	2346
Color	ado		
2.	Denver Police Department	95.4	5395
Distr	ict of Columbia		
3.	Metropolitan Washington Police Department	61.2	12,361

Table 9.--Continued.

	Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
F	lorida		
	4. Jacksonville Sheriff's Department	765.7	691
I	ndiana		
	5. Indianapolis Police Department	383.9	1940
M	aryland		
	6. Baltimore City Police Department	78.3	11,568
M	issouri		
	7. Kansas City Police Department	316.3	1604
0	hio		
	8. Columbus Police Department	134.6	4009
T	ennessee		
	9. Memphis Police Department	217.4	2868
T	exas		
1	0. Dallas Police Department	265.6	3179
1	1. San Antonio Police Department	184.0	3555
W	ashington		
1	2. Seattle Police Department	83.6	6350
Over	1,000,000		
Cou	nty		
<u>c</u>	alifornia		
	1. Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department	4069	1730
	2. San Diego Sheriff's Aero Squadron	4261	319
F	lorida		
	<ol> <li>Dade County Public Safety Department</li> </ol>	2042	621
M	ichigan		
	4. Wayne County Sheriff's Department	605	4414
N	ew York		
	5. Nassau County Police	289	4944
	6. Suffolk County Police Department	929	1213

-

Table 9.--Continued.

Population	Area Sq. Mi.	Density*
Texas		
7. Harris County Sheriff	1723	1011
Localities		
California		
l. Los Angeles Police Department	463.7	6069
Illinois		
2. Chicago Police Department	222.6	15,126
Michigan		
3. Detroit Police Department	138.0	10,953
New York		
4. Metro Transit	• •	• •
5. New York City Police Department		
New York City	299.7	26,343
Bronx	41.2	35,721
Brooklyn	70.3	37,013
Manhattan	22.7	67,808
Queens	108.0	18,393
Richmond	57.5	5,138
Texas		
6. Houston Police Department	433.9	2,841

\*Population per square mile.

# The Problems in Using Helicopters for Patrol

Sample agencies in the Chester survey were asked to list the major operating problems connected with their helicopter program. Although the survey asked that the problems be listed in order of priority it was discovered that many agencies tended to repeat the same problem in different priority locations such as:

- 1. Maintenance
- 2. Staff problems
- 3. Failure to obtain parts
- 4. Shortage of crews.<sup>8</sup>

It was decided, therefore, that the priority positions were largely being ignored and the users were listing complaints about the problems in general. Each complaint was categorized by general function, i.e., in the above example, "failure to obtain parts" was categorized as maintenance, while "not enough crews" was grouped under staff problems. The complaints are listed in order of frequency.

There were other complaints which were lightly scattered throughout the complaint sections of the survey which touched vaguely on failure of federal support, limited scope evaluations, and general disappointment in everyone's lack of understanding of the importance of the program. These were considered too general to categorize. It is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup>Chester, <u>Preliminary Survey of Agencies Utilizing</u> <u>Airborne Vehicles, Vol. II, p. 20.</u>

also notable that those who complain of too few vehicles were mostly representative of one helicopter agencies and claimed that one vehicle would not sustain a helicopter program. There are twenty-three agencies with only one helicopter, two at the state level, ten county, and eleven local. These complaint categories are detailed in Table 10.

Problem Complaint	Frequency
Maintenance Problems	80
Cost of Operation	46
Cost of Parts	31
Radio Problems	21
Weather	15
Need More Helicopters	14
Staff Problems	12
Low Speed	9
Public Support Lacking	9
Political Support Lacking	8
Police Officer Support Lacking	8
Noise Complaints	8
Low Load Capacity	4
Air Regulations	4
Airport Location	4
Account Method for Cost-Effectiveness	3
Need Special Police Helicopters	2
Equipment	2
Not Enough Use	1

Table 10.--Operational Problems Reported by Sample Agencies Listed by Frequency.

In the present study, the sample agencies were asked to reply to four questions which asked for very general evaluations based on opinions and perceptions:

- 22. Does your department believe that the use of the helicopter in anti-crime has reduced street crime?
- 23. Does your department believe that helicopter use has reduced any particular category of crime?

Yes No Category\_

27. Has your program revealed instances in which helicopter patrol seems to shift the crime to areas outside the patrol perimeter? 31. Will you please state briefly the general view of your department toward the use of helicopters in police service?

The purpose in these questions was to probe the perceptions of the users of helicopters as to the value of the programs in relation to crime and seek methods of documentation for evaluation. Generally there was no documentation of claims that helicopters reduced crime. Those instances of documentation are detailed in a later section of this chapter. Interestingly, some of the agencies answered in the negative, that they did not believe helicopter patrol had reduced street crime.

Another purpose of the questions is to establish whether or not a trend in perceptions and beliefs exists among the users of helicopters in police patrol. Such a trend would be important to researchers in matters of validity. No specific agency identification is made in connection with any perceptions or opinions.

----I

The compilation of the answers to questions 22, 23, 27, and 31 is on, respectively, Tables 11, 12, 13, and 14.

Answer	Frequency	% of Total
Yes	44	59
No	5	7
Unknown	10	13
No Answer	16	21

ALL A STATE AND A STATE

# Table 11.--Answers to Question 22\* by Sample Agencies According to Frequency.\*\*

\*Does your department believe that the use of the helicopter in anti-crime patrol has reduced street crime?

**\*\***Data from 75 respondent answers to author survey.

Answer	Frequency	% of Total
Yes	56	75
No	8	10
Unknown	2	3
No Answer	9	12
Category, If Yes***		
Burglary	28	
Robbery	7	
Auto Theft	4	
Traffic Offenses	2	
Malicious Destruction	2	
Farm Larceny	1	
Marine Larceny	1	
Mugging	1	
Purse Snatching	1	
Marijuana Growth	1	

詞

# Table 12.--Answers to Question 23\* by Sample Agencies According to Frequency.\*\*

\*Does your department believe that helicopter use has reduced any particular category of crime?

\*\*Data from 75 respondent answers to author survey.

\*\*\*Some agencies answered yes but did not categorize which renders the categorization inadditive.

Answer	Frequency	۶ of Total
Yes	29	39
No	26	35
Unknown	8	10
No Answer	12	16

Table 13.--Answers to Question 27\* by Sample Agencies According to Frequency.\*\*

\*Has your program revealed instances in which helicopter patrol seems to shift the crime to areas outside the patrol perimeter?

**\*\***Data from 75 respondent answers to author survey.

Question 31 was totally an opinion, or perception question and brought forth a variety of answers. In those instances where an agency provided an opinion or perception of more than one characteristic of helicopter use, all were included so that this total is not additive. It is notable that the answers contain only ten negative replies and only four negative categories.

Answer	Frequency
A Valuable Tool for Police	17
Generally Favorable View	11
Good for Traffic Patrol	7
Liked by Officers	5
Prevents Crime	5
Quick Response Time	4
Good Search Tool	4
Intend to Expand Program	3
Good Ambulance Vehicle	2
Good Observation Platform	2
Increases Officer Security	2
Increases Public Safety	2
Good for Air Photo Evidence	2
Cost-Effectiveness High	2
Good for Transport of Personnel	2
Liked by Public	2
Unmatched Capabilities	2
Chase of Suspects and Cars	2
Increases Omnipresence of Police	1
Rescue	1
Wide Patrol Range	1
Very Expensive Program	6
Slow Speed of Vehicles	2
Vehicles are Noisy	1
Require Excessive Maintenance	1

A

Table 14.--Answers to Question 31\* by Sample Agencies According to Frequency.\*\*

\*Will you please state briefly the general view of your department toward the use of helicopters in police service?

**\*\***Data from 75 respondent answers to author survey.

# The Chester Survey of Mission Evaluation

The Chester survey sought mission priority definition from agencies using helicopters in law enforcement by using a standard list of missions which respondents were permitted to expand. Each agency was asked to rate mission priority from high at 1 to low at 5. Respondents could assign any rating to any mission, which meant that there could be several missions in each agency with similar priority ratings. The agencies were also asked to rate the effectiveness of helicopters for each mission on the basis of H for high, M for medium, and L for low. Where no modal rating is given, it was assumed the mission was irrelevant.

The priority numbers for all responding agencies for a given priority mission within each population group were averaged. Summary helicopter effectiveness ratings were obtained by taking the modal rating for a relevant group of

respondents or a given mission. Where two different ratings were assigned by an equal number of respondents, both modal ratings were given, as, for example, HM. Where all three ratings were indicated by an equal number of respondents the designation was M for modal rating.

If 75 or more percent of the responding agencies rated a mission with a scalar number, this was considered a priority mission. Double X designations indicate that all, or nearly all, of the respondents in the population group rated the mission with a scalar number.<sup>9</sup>

This method of evaluation leans on the opinions and perceptions of the users of helicopters as a basis for assigning value to missions. Although it shows no statistical relationship to crime, the perceived importance of police missions are a factor that may be considered by researchers and teachers alike because of the fact that a good deal of evaluation of police missions arises from this source.<sup>10</sup>

The Chester mission scales for counties are in Table 15 and those for local groups are in Table 16.

<sup>9</sup>Chester, <u>Preliminary Survey of Agencies Utilizing</u> <u>Airborne Vehicles, Vol. 1, p. 8.</u>

<sup>10</sup>See Table 1 supra p. 107.

Table 15.---Major Missions, Average Mission Priority, and Modal Helicopter Effectiveness Rating by Mission for County Agencies by Population Groups.

Propulse of Agencies in the Propulse of Agencies in the sented likes         JO         JJ         ZO         JD         JD         J           Number of Agencies Repre- sented likes         0         13         20         10         1         1         1           Number of Agencies Repre- sented likes         0         13         20         10         1         1           Number of Agencies Repre- sented likes         0         10         1	Population of Counties		Below 100,000			00,000 to		2 2	00,000 to		1,0	00,000 to 00,000		-	Over 000,00	
Number of Agencies Rere- sented Hare         Main	Number of Agencies in the Population Group		ЭО			13			20			10			2	
Mathematical Matrix M	Number of Agencies Repre- sented Here		ъ			~			œ			10			~	
Command PostHXAHXAHXAHigh Speed ChaseLLNNNNNNNNProvide Intercept Data to GroudX3HXX1HX1NProvide Intercept Data to GroudX3HXX1HX1NGeneral SurvillanceX2HXX2HX2HXGeneral SurvillanceX1HXX2HX2HX1HGeneral SurvillanceX1HXX2HX2HX1HGovert SurvillanceX1HXX2HXX2HX2HSarch ActivitiesX1HXX2HXX2HX2HSarch ActivitiesX1HXX2HX2HX2HSarch ActivitiesX1HXX2HX2HX2HSarch ActivitiesX1HXX2HX2HX2HSarch ActivitiesX1HXX2HX2HX2HSarch StrivitiesX1HXX2HX2H<	Mission	Priority Missions	Ανεταge Ρτίοτίζ	Касілд Модаї	Ρτίοτίζγ Μίεείουε	Ανεταge ΡτίοτίζΥ	Rating Modal	Priority Missions	Ανεταge ΡτίοτίζΥ	Rating Pating	ΡτίοτίζΥ Μί <b>εε</b> ίοπε	Ρτίοτίζ Ανεταge	Касілд Касілд	Priority Missions	Ανεταge Ρτίοτίτς	Modal Rating
High Speed ChaseLLLLLHXJJHXJJJ <td>Command Post</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td>H</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td>H</td> <td>×</td> <td>4</td> <td>H</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td>H</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td>H</td>	Command Post			H			H	×	4	H			H			H
Provide Intercept Data to GroundX3HXX3HX3HX3HX34Patrol ActivitiesX2MHX2MHX1HX1HX1HCovert SurvillanceX2HXX2HXX1HX1HX1HGeneral SurvillanceX1HXX2HXX1HX1HGeneral SurvillanceX1HXX2HX2HX2HGeneral SurvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX2HX2HX2HSarvillanceX1HX1YZHX2HSarvillanceX2HX1X1Y	High Speed Chase			ч			Σ	×	m	Σ			H			H
Patrol ActivitiesXXZWHXXZWHXXZWXXZYYZZGeneral SurveillanceXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZGeneral SurveillanceXZHXXZHXXZHXXZZHGoneral SurveillanceXIHXXZHXXZHXZZHGoneral SurveillanceXIHXXZHXXZHXZZHGoneral SurveillanceXIHXXZHXXZHXZHFygitivesXIHXXZHXXZHXZHFygitivesXIHXXZHXXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)HXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)HXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)HXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)HXZHXZHXZHTransportTransportTHXZH <t< td=""><td>Provide Intercept Data to Ground</td><td>×</td><td>٣</td><td>H</td><td>xx</td><td>٣</td><td>н</td><td>XX</td><td>٣</td><td>н</td><td>×</td><td>2</td><td>Н</td><td></td><td></td><td>H</td></t<>	Provide Intercept Data to Ground	×	٣	H	xx	٣	н	XX	٣	н	×	2	Н			H
General SurveillanceXZHXXZHXXZHXZHCovert SurveillanceX1XXZHXZHXZHSarch ActivitiesX1YXZHXZHXZHSerch ActivitiesX1HXZHXZHXZHSerch ActivitiesX1HXZHXZHXZHSerch ActivitiesX1HXZHXZHXZHSerch ActivitiesX1HXZHXZHXZHServity (Special Visitors, etc.)X2HXZHXZHServity (Special Visitors, etc.)X2HXZHXZHServity (Special Visitors, etc.)MXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)MXZHXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)MXZHXZHXZHXZHSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)MXZHXZHXZHZ <td< td=""><td>Patrol Activities</td><td>ХХ</td><td>2</td><td>H/M</td><td></td><td></td><td>H</td><td>xx</td><td>г</td><td>н</td><td>×</td><td>r</td><td>н</td><td>xx</td><td>г</td><td>Н</td></td<>	Patrol Activities	ХХ	2	H/M			H	xx	г	н	×	r	н	xx	г	Н
Covert Surveillance       L       L       L       L       K       Z       Z       K       Z       Z       K       Z       Z       K       Z	General Surveillance	×	2	H	XX	7	Н	XX	2	Σ	xx	2	Н			H
Search Activities         X         I         X         Z         H         XX         Z         H         XX         Z         H         X         Z         H         X         Z         H         X         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z         Z         H         X         Z	<b>Covert Surveillance</b>						г			ц			Σ	×	2	Н
FugitivesX1X2HXX2HXX3M.VehiclesX1HX1HX3HX2HVehiclesX1HX2HX3HX2HNighttime PatrolX4HX1HX3HX2HSecurity (Special Visitors, etc.)X2HXX2HX2HEmergency RescuesX2HXX2HX2HX2HTraffic ControlX2HXX2HX2HX2HTraffic ControlX2HXX1HX2HX2HTraffic ControlXHXX1HX1HX11Traffic ControlXHXX1HX1HX11Traffic ControlXHXX1HX1HX111Traffic ControlXHX1HX1HX111Traffic ControlXHX1HX1HX111ParamonelYYHXYYH </td <td>Search Activities</td> <td></td>	Search Activities															
vehiclesx1Hx3Hx3Hx2HNighttime Patrolx41Hxx2Hxx2Hxx2HSecurity (special Visitors, etc.)x4Hxx1Hxx2Hxx2HEmergency Rescuesx2Hxx1Hxx2Hxx2HTraffic Controlx2Hxx1Hxx2Hxx2HTraffic Controlx2Hxx1Hxx2Hxx2HTraffic Controlx1Hxx1Hxx1Hx2HTraffic Controlx1Hxx1Hx2Hx2HTraffic SurveyHxx1Hxx1Hx111Priotority CargoHxx1Hx1Hx111Priotority CargoHxx1Hx1Hx111Priotority CargoHxx1Hx1Hx111Priotority CargoHxx1Hx1Hx1111Priotority CargoH <td>Fugitives</td> <td>×</td> <td>I</td> <td>н</td> <td>××</td> <td>2</td> <td>н</td> <td>XX</td> <td>7</td> <td>Н</td> <td>xx</td> <td>e</td> <td>Σ</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td>H</td>	Fugitives	×	I	н	××	2	н	XX	7	Н	xx	e	Σ			H
Nighttime PatrolXAHXXZHXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZHXXZZHXXZZHXXZZHXZZZ <th< td=""><td>Vehicles</td><td>×</td><td>г</td><td>н</td><td></td><td></td><td>н</td><td>×</td><td>e</td><td>н</td><td>×</td><td>m</td><td>Н</td><td>×</td><td>2</td><td>н</td></th<>	Vehicles	×	г	н			н	×	e	н	×	m	Н	×	2	н
Security (Special Visitors, etc.)MMMHMHMEmergency Rescuesx2Hxx1Hx1HX1Traffic Controlx2Hxx1Hx1HX1Traffic ControlMMX1HX1HX1HTransportMMX3HMMY2HX1TransportMMXX3HMMMY2HTransportMMXX3HMMMY2HFergencyFergencyMMMMMMMY2HTransportMMMMMMMMMY2HFergencyFergencyMMMMMMMMMMFergencyFergencyMMMMMMMMMMFergencyMMMMMMMMMMMMFergencyMMMMMMMMMMMMFergencyMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMM<	Nighttime Patrol	×	4	H			н	xx	2	H	×	2	Н	xx	2	н
Emergency Rescues       X       2       H       XX       1       H       X       1       Y       1       X       1       1       X       1       1       X       1       1       X       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1 <th1< th=""> <th1< th=""> <th1< th=""></th1<></th1<></th1<>	Security (Special Visitors, etc.)			X			Σ			н			H			H
Transfic Control       M       M/L       M/L       M/L       M/L       K/L	Emergency Rescues	×	2	H	XX	٦	н	xx	2	Н			H	×	1	H
TransportTransportHHXX2HEmergencyM/HXX3HHXX2HFriority CargoHXX4HYHXX2HOfficial PersonnelMX4HYHY1Narcotics DetectionXX2HX4M/LHNarcotics DetectionXX2HX2HRiot ControlHY2HHHTraffic SurveyMHX2HHPhoto PlatformHX2HHHTrainingHXHHHHSearch for Lost PersonsHHHHH	Traffic Control			Σ			н			M/L			M/L	×	4	н
Emergency       M/H       XX       3       H       H       XX       2       H         Priority Cargo       H       XX       4       H       XX       2       H       H       XX       2       H         Official Personnel       M       XX       4       H       XX       2       H       H       XX       2       H         Narcotical Personnel in Custody       M       M       L       L       L       L       L       H       K       2       H         Narcotics Detection       XX       2       M       X       2       H       K       2       H       L	Transport															
Priority CargoHXXAHMHHHHOfficial PersonnelMMMMHHHHHHPersonnel in CustodyMMMLLLLLLNarcotics DetectionXX2MXX2HN/LHHRiot ControlHX2HX2HHHTraffic SurveyMHX2HHHHPhoto PlatformHHX2HHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingHHHHHHHTrainingH <td< td=""><td>Emergency</td><td></td><td></td><td>H/H</td><td>XX</td><td>m</td><td>Н</td><td></td><td></td><td>H</td><td></td><td></td><td>Н</td><td>xx</td><td>2</td><td>H</td></td<>	Emergency			H/H	XX	m	Н			H			Н	xx	2	H
Official Personnel       M       M       H	Priority Cargo			Н	xx	4	H			Σ			н			H
Personnel in CustodyLLLLNarcotics DetectionXX2MXX2MRiot ControlHXX2HMHTraffic SurveyHX2HHPhoto PlatformHX2HHTrainingHHHHHSearch for Lost PersonsHHHH	Official Personnel			Σ			Σ			Σ			Н			H
Narcotics Detection XX 2 M XX 2 H X 4 M M/L H Riot Control H X 2 H X 2 H H K 2 H H H H H H H H H H H H H H H	Personnel in Custody						ч			ц			ч			ч
Riot ControlHKZHHHTraffic SurveyMMHHHPhoto PlatformHHHHTrainingHHHHSearch for Lost PersonsPhoto PlatformHM	Narcotics Detection	ХХ	2	Σ	x	2	H	×	4	Σ			M/L			H
Traffic Survey       M         Photo Platform       H         Training       H         Search for Lost Persons       M	Riot Control			H			H	×	2	H			H			H
Photo Platform H H H H Training H Training M M H H H	Traffic Survey			æ												
Training Search for Lost Persons M	Photo Platform			н						Н			Н			н
Search for Lost Persons M	Training									H						
	Search for Lost Persons												¥			

h

.

Local	
for	
by Mission	
Ratings	
r Effectiveness	
Helicopter	
and Modal	
n Priority,	
sio	. sq
Mis	Grou
Average	ulation (
Missions,	es by Pop
6Major	Agenci
Table l	

		Below			00,000 to			00,000 to			500,000 to	_		Over	
Population of Localities		100,000	_	2	000,000		ŝ	000,000		1,0	000,000	_	 -	000,00	0
Number of Agencies in the Population Group		16			21			15			12			-	
Number of Agencies Repre- sented Here		9			18			1			12			و	
Mission	ΡτίοτίζΥ Μίσείοπε	Ανετασε Ρτίοτίζ	Габом раѓјбя	Priority Briors	ΡτίοτίζΥ Ανετάζε	LeboM Paijes	Priority Missions	Ανεταge Ρτιοιιζγ	ГеБоМ рпіјья	Priority Missions	Ανεταge ΡτίοτίζΥ	LeboM Modal	Priority Missions	Ρτίοτίς Ανετάζε	gating Rabon
Command Post			Σ			Ŧ			Ŧ			н			Ŧ
High Speed Chase			Σ	xx	2	H	×	7	н	×	2	н	×	1	н
Provide Intercept Data to Ground	XX	2	H	xx	1	н	×	I	н	×	2	н			H
Patrol Activities	ХХ	2	Н	×	7	H	ХХ	7	Η	XX	٦	н	××	2	н
General Surveillance	×	e	H	×	2	H	ХХ	٣	н	xx	2	н	xx	2	H/W
Covert Surveillance	×	4	Σ			н			н			H	×	2	H
Search Activities															
Fugitives			H	xx	2	H	×	7	H	×	2	н	×	e	H
Vehicles	×	7	Η	×	m	н	×	2	Σ	×	2	H	×	m	H
Nighttime Patrol	×	Ч	H	×	ч	H	×	7	Σ	×	Ч	H	×	2	H
Security (Special Visitors, etc.)			H			H/W			H			Σ	×	4	H
Emergency Rescues			H			H			ы			Ψ			Σ
Traffic Control			H			H			н			н	xx	2	н
Transport															
Emergency			H			H			Ч			Σ			Σ
Priority Cargo			H			Н			H			ч			Σ
Official Personnel			н			Н			M/L			Σ			H
Personnel in Custody			ч			ч			M/L						ч
Narcotics Detection			X			Ч			ч			M/L			Σ
Riot Control			H			H			H			H			H
Public Relations			H			H			н						
Assistance to Other Agencies			H						Ч						
Search for Lost Persons						H									
Photo Platform						H			Н			H			
Felonies in Progress									н						
School Checks												Σ			
Distant Violations												Σ			
Emergency Communication Relay					•										Σ

ļ

# Examples of Evaluation Formulae

In the author's questionnaire, those police agencies contacted were also asked to provide documentation for any claims of effectiveness in helicopter patrol insofar as crime deterrence and prevention were concerned. A small number included test and/or evaluation data. This data provides an interesting view of police efforts on testing and evaluation which may be affected by the pressure of the necessity for justification of the program.

Nevertheless, it is considered that this data, although it suffers in each instance from some form of lack of validity, will provide useful information to future researchers in that it includes some formulae which might be useful in future research.

These reports are presented in no particular order except as received. In fact, except for alpha order or size and population groupings, no order was evident and it was considered unimportant to this study to use any of these forms of categorization since the import lies in a description of the methodology or experience of each respondent.

#### Tucson, Arizona

The Tucson, Arizona police (1973) provide a report which cites that Tucson is undermanned with 1.9 police employees per 1000 population as compared to the national average of 3.3 police employees per 1000 population for comparable size cities. The report further notes that from 1962 through 1971 the population increased 23.5 percent, the area size enlarged by 17 percent, and crime rose 75 percent. The report cites these figures as pointing to a need for innovation in crime prevention.

In initiating the helicopter project, Tucson's goals were listed as:

- 1. Improve police response time
- 2. Demonstrate successful daytime surveillance methods
- 3. Initiate effective nighttime surveillance
- 4. Increase patrol observation
- 5. Increase officers' security
- 6. Reduce crime in the project area<sup>11</sup>

These goals, which may be standard for police departments which are initiating helicopter programs, are <u>exactly</u> the same as those of Project Sky Knight (PSK) which began in June of 1966 in California.<sup>12</sup>

The Tucson report continues by reiterating the theory of visibility and speed in mobility as a deterrent to crime, citing the potential criminal's fear of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup>Tucson Police Evaluation Report: Tucson Air Mobility Program, May-September, 1972.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup>See Whisenand, <u>Use of Helicopters</u>, supra p. 65 at Note 68.

apprehension. Because of this combination of speed and fear the report continues, crime will be reduced.<sup>13</sup>

The report further cites that a helicopter is <u>ten</u> times more visible than a ground unit and will provide for greater visibility since helicopter units spent 74 percent of flight time on patrol as compared to a <u>meager</u> 20 percent for a ground unit.<sup>14</sup> No mention is made of how this figure is determined or of whether it compares one helicopter to one ground unit. Tucson has 250 plus cars which would seem to provide considerably more patrol, even at a ratio of 20 to 74, than a few helicopters. Incidentally, later in the report, it states that the helicopter has <u>35 times</u> the observation capability of a ground unit but fails to say why this is so.<sup>15</sup>

Tucson reports that scout car response averages 16 minutes for all calls compared to 1 1/2 minutes, <u>while</u> <u>airborne</u>, for the helicopter as an example of meeting objective number one.<sup>16</sup>

This report observes that major crimes decreased 9.7 percent in the helicopter test area and increased in the total city by 11.2 percent during the test period of May-September 1972. The test area was comprised of 20

> 13Tucson Report, p. 21. 14Ibid. (emphasis mine). 15Ibid., p. 19. 16Ibid., p. 37 (emphasis mine).

square miles of the total Tucson area of 91.5 miles. The report cites, in particular, decreases in the incidence of rape, robbery, burglary, and auto theft.<sup>17</sup>

By way of evaluation of cost-effectiveness, an alphabetical value A, B, C, or D was assigned to both ground and air units in accordance to how they performed functions. The basis of decision to rate was given a numeric value A-8, B-6, C-4, or D-2 depending on credibility of source, such as hard data, personal knowledge, or intuitive judgement. Added to this was the importance attached to police functions, which were given a numerical value of 20 for most important, 10 for very important, 8 for average importance, and 5 for minor importance. These final function gradings were subject to one further evaluation which consisted of an intuitive judgement of the reasonableness of the result.

As the costs were computed, the conclusion was reached that the helicopter program would cost \$203,000 per year, which was the cost of three patrol units per year.<sup>18</sup>

Finally, this report notes improvement in perceived security by citizens and police alike as the result of the helicopter program according to questionnaire results.

> <sup>17</sup>Ibid., pp. 25-26. <sup>18</sup>Ibid., pp. 61-62.

Another benefit, of course, was suppression of crime in the test area as shown by the crime statistics.<sup>19</sup>

The Tucson project evaluation is subject to considerable question because it seems to suffer defects in both internal and external validity. A view of the cost benefit findings on the table seem geared to make the helicopter look good in relation to the patrol car. For instance, to place an A rating on providing officer safety for the helicopter, as opposed to a D rating for a surface unit is virtually indefensible, even as an "intuitive" source rating.

Further, in regard to response time, it is not correct to average the times of surface unit response to calls for service and include non-priority service while comparing these to helicopter response times when airborne on patrol.<sup>20</sup>

There are other problems in this report which have to do with the failure to make contiguous area crime comparisons before and after the test, failure to adequately prepare comparison statistics plus the provision of biased statistics apparently geared to provide justification for the helicopter program.

But it is one of the evaluation efforts connected with a helicopter program which does more than present

<sup>20</sup>Ibid., pp. 77-78.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup>Ibid., p. 81.

incomplete crime statistics and glowing press releases. This report does try to establish a system of identifying some use and performance values which are aimed at relating the theories of visibility and mobility to crime deterrence and prevention. The Tucson data are in Tables 17 and 18.

A

A STATE OF A

-

Table 17.--Tucson Police Evaluation Factors.\*

## 1.0 Most Important

1.1 Crime Deterrence
1.2 Apprehension
1.3 Officers' Safety (Actual)

#### 2.0 Very Important

2.1 Response Time
2.2 Community Safety from Operations

# 3.0 Important

3.1 Officers' Safety (Perceived) 3.2 Provision of Public Services

## 4.0 Average Importance

4.1 Community's Perception of Security 4.2 Ecological Concern

# 5.0 Minor Importance

5.1 Person-to-Person Contact

\*As seen by Mayor, Council, City Manager, and Police Chief, see Tucson Report, p. 63.

Findings.
Analysis
Cost-Benefit
Police
18Tucson
le

Tak	ole 18Tucson Police Cost-Benefit And	alysis Fi	ndings.				
			Helicop	ter		Patrol	Cars
	Evaluation Factors	Rat Grade	ing Value	<b>Confidence</b> <b>Level</b>	Rat Grade	ing Value	Confidence Level
	Most Important (20 points)						
	<ol> <li>Crime Deterrence</li> <li>Apprehensions</li> <li>Officers' Safety (Actual)</li> </ol>	A U A	160 80 400	C C LC	U m D	80 120 240	ပ ပ္ ပ
ъ.	Very Important (15 points)						
	<ol> <li>Response Time</li> <li>Community Safety</li> <li>from Operations</li> </ol>	8 8	120 240	VC	ДЩ	30 120	υυ
э.	Important (10 points)						
~	3.1. Officers' Safety (Perceived) 3.2. Provision of Services	<b>A</b> B	80 140	U DI	Сщ	40 100 100	ပ္ပ
T	Average importance to points/						
	4.1. Communty resception of Security 4.2. Ecological Concern	<b>R</b> O	64 80	C C	υυ	32 32 64	N N
5.	<u>Minor Importance</u> (5 points)						
	5.1. Person-to-Person Contact	υ	50	υ	Ø	30	ပ
	TOTAL		880			554	

#### Detroit, Michigan

The Detroit police, 1974, provide a cost comparison which equates the cost of patrol units with arrests. This report indicates that the cost is based on number and cost of patrol hours. The surface units patrol 1 million hours per year at a cost of \$22.00 per hour, while the helicopter patrols 1,930 hours at a cost of \$50.00 per hour. There were 494 felony arrest assists for the helicopter at 3.90 hours per arrest, and 50,791 for the surface unit at 19.1 hours per arrest. This results in a cost per felony arrest of \$195.00 for the helicopter and \$420.00 per arrest for the surface unit.<sup>21</sup>

Additionally, the Detroit report provides statistics which show that the crimes of robbery, breaking and entering, larceny, and unlawfully driving away automobile were repressed substantially in the helicopter test area. There are, however, no supporting statistics with this report and no validation of the cost figures.<sup>22</sup> Detroit data are in Tables 19, 20, and 21.

<sup>21</sup>Detroit Police, <u>Aviation Operations Section Twelve</u> Month Report, furnished by Sgt. D. Campbell, p. 10.

<sup>22</sup>Ibid., p. 7.

	City of Detroit Crime Decrease 1971 vs 1972		
	Test Down %	Control Down %	Other Down %
Robbery	22.6	15.2	15.1
Breaking & Entering	24.6	9.6	16.6
Larceny	28.8	19.9	23.8
Unlawfully Driving Away Automobile	21.8	3.5	5.8

Table 19.--Detroit Police Evaluation of the Effect of Helicopter Patrol on Crime.\*

\*Data from Detroit Police, Aviation Operations Section Twelve Month Report, 1973. p. 6.

Table 20.--Detroit Police Helicopter Program Cost-Effectiveness Evaluation.\*

n ka otoki da ka	1973 Operation	Cost Comparison
	Helicopter	Scout Car
Patrol Hours	1,930	1,000,000
Felony Arrest Assists	494	50,791
Hours Per Arrest	3.9	19.1
Cost Per Hour		
2 Man Crew	\$20.00	\$20.00
Cost Per Hour		
Equipment	\$30.00	\$ 2.00
Total Cost Per Hour	\$50.00	\$22.00
Cost Per Felony Arrest	\$195.00	\$420.00
Cost Difference		\$225.00

\*Data from Detroit Police, Aviation Operations Section Twelve Month Report, 1973, p. 10.

j-		
	1973	1972
Crime Patrol		
Response Time	1 Min. 30 Sec.	l Min. 15 Sec.
In Progress Runs	3,858	2,881
Felony Arrest Assists	494	428
Traffic Patrol		
Traffic Cars Cancelled	214	195
Traffic Tieups (All Causes)	677	582

Table 21.--Detroit Police Statement of Accomplishments of Helicopter Program.\*

\*Data from Detroit Police, <u>Aviation Operations</u> Section Twelve Month Report, 1973, p. 10.

## Columbus, Ohio

Simonsen (1974) reports on Project Phase (Police Helicopters For Area Selective Enforcement) in Columbus, Ohio, for the year 1973 by revealing the six stated goals of the project:

- 1. Improve response time
- Demonstrate successful daytime surveillance 2. methods
- 3. Initiate effective nighttime surveillance
- Increase patrol observation 4.
- 5.
- Increase officer security Reduce crime through area selective enforcement 6. by use of helicopter patrols<sup>23</sup>

A CONTRACTOR OF

Again, it is notable that the stated goals of the program are carbons of earlier programs in other cities. It might be useful to determine whether these are provided as standards by some central authority after testing and proof, or are becoming accepted as standards for new police helicopter programs by being repeated over and over and passed from one organization to another.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>24</sup>See Tucson Report supra at p. 160 and Whisenand, "The Use of Helicopters," supra at p. 64.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup>Clifford E. Simonsen, <u>An Evaluation of Helicopter</u> Patrol Activities in Columbus (Columbus, Ohio: Program for Study of Crime and Delinquency, 1974), p. 18.

Simonsen's formula for a productivity ratio (PR) is derived from this formula:

Total Number of Demands for Police Service

Total Police Patrol Vehicle Hours Available

By using this formula, Simonsen shows that Columbus, Ohio helicopters have a higher PR than surface units, with helicopters at PR 2.94 and cruisers at 1.02. He also demonstrates, in cost effectiveness evaluation, that because of this higher PR the productivity/effectiveness cost of a helicopter is \$10.13 per contact versus \$11.45 per contact for a surface patrol cruiser.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>25</sup>Simonsen, <u>Patrol Activities in Columbus</u>, pp. 21-32. It is notable that in this section of the report, Simonsen cites that use of PR as a comparative statistic provides more importance and validity than the use of arrest rates, offense rates, or similar narrow criteria since the helicopter bureau runs are made to all cruiser districts and are primarily back-up runs. One wonders what effect this has on the PR formula, i.e.:

Total Number of Demands for Police Service

Total Police Patrol Vehicle Hours Available 1. Primary 2. Back-up

Simonsen used a questionnaire to probe for business men, community, and officer acceptance of the program and for feelings of security. He reports an overwhelming acceptance by all concerned, along with a belief that there is a greater security with helicopter patrol.<sup>26</sup>

This report further observes a lessening of reported crime in eight of the fifteen cruiser districts in the zone patrolled by helicopter and an overall decrease of 2.5 percent in the entire zone despite an increase of demands for service of 7.8 percent. Simonsen notes that while this does not firmly establish cause and effect, there is little evidence of any other factor contributing to this unusual pattern.<sup>27</sup>

Simonsen feels that his report supports the theory that helicopter patrol suppresses crime but footnotes the possibility that some of the zone II crime may have "spilled over" into Zone I. He suggests that more intensive patrol of Zone I may have prevented this "spill over" but does not suggest, as is possible, that it might have "spilled over" to some other area.<sup>28</sup>

Simonsen's formula for measuring the "productivity ratio" may lack validity when used to compare cars and helicopters because of the bias in differential selection

<sup>26</sup>Ibid., pp. 33-49.
<sup>27</sup>Ibid., p. 52.
<sup>28</sup>Ibid., p. 58.

of respondents for comparison. Other researchers have repeated this same error, which assumes a sameness of availability for service which is simply nonexistent between cruisers and helicopters.

Again, it is important to notice that this is a scientific attempt to study the problem. It does not rely on short statistics and press releases but tries to relate patrol practices to crime deterrence and prevention and serves as a guide to further efforts to seek such relationships. Simonsen data are in Tables 22, 23, 24, and 25.

Table	22Columbus,	Ohio	Police	Compari	.son	of Coa	st
	Effectiver	ness d	of Helio	copters	to	Cruise	rs.*

		Helicopter Patrol	Cruiser Patrol
Α.	Total Cost	\$402,412.95	\$2,888,301.25
в.	Patrol Hours	4,589	254,040 (29x24x365)
	Cost per hour $(\frac{A}{B})$	\$87.69	\$11.37
c.	Contacts	13,503	274,554
	Cost per contact $(\frac{A}{C})$	\$29.80	\$11.68
D.	Productivity Ratio (PR)	2.94	1.02
	Productivity/Effectiveness Cost (PER) ( <u>C</u> ) D	\$10.13	\$11.45

\*Data from Simonsen, <u>Patrol Activities in Columbus</u>, p. 32.

Dragingt	ct Cruiser	~~	Offenses			
Precinct		er	1972	1973	Change	
1	10		549	571	+ 4 %	
	11		943	1022	+ 8 %	
	12		986	979	- 0.9%	
	13		601	612	+ 1.8%	
4	40		1496	1468	- 1.8%	
	41		2032	2002	- 1.4%	
	42		733	782	+ 6.6%	
	43		1343	1252	- 6.7%	
5	50		1573	1522	- 3.28	
	51		1440	1486	+ 3.1%	
6	60		464	475	+ 2.38	
	61		369	388	+ 5.18	
	62		440	523	+18.88	
	63		326	341	+ 4.68	
	64		231	259	+12.18	
	65		474	520	+ 9.78	
Total		14	4,000	14,202	+ 1.49	
*Da	ata from	Simonsen,	Patrol	Activities	in Columbus,	

Table 23.--Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Change in Crimes Reported After Use of Helicopter Patrols in Zone 1.\*

p. 50.
Drogingt	Cruisor		Offenses		
Precinct	Cruiser	1972	1973	Change	
8	80	741	815	+ 9.98	
	81	1015	855	-15.7%	
	82	399	400	•••	
11	110	1026	891	-13.1%	
	111	470	588	+88	
	112	714	764	+7%	
	113	630	628	• • •	
	114	499	540	+ 8.2%	
12	120	1666	1549	- 7 %	
	121	804	847	+ 5.3%	
	122	423	436	+ 3 %	
	123	1020	901	-11.6%	
	124	361	382	+ 5.8%	
13	130	1055	1031	- 2.28	
	131	629	629	- 3 %	
Total		11,471	11,176	- 2.5%	
*Da	ta from Simon	sen, <u>Patrol</u>	Activities in	Columbus,	

terne vi della di la con

Table 24.--Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Change in Crimes Reported After Use of Helicopter Patrols in Zone 2.\*

p. 50.

	1972	1973	Percentage Change
Zone 2	9,005	8,413	-6.5%
Zone l	11,202	11,410	+1.8%
Total Part I Crime Columbus	32,734	33,225	+1.4%

Table 25.--Columbus, Ohio Comparison of Changes in Serious Crime After Use of Helicopter Patrols in Zones 1 and 2.\*

\*Data from Simonsen, <u>Patrol Activities in Columbus</u>, p. 52.

# Lansing, Michigan

Cochran (1975) reports that the Lansing Police had four goals in initiating helicopter patrol from January 1, 1974, through April 15, 1975:

- Demonstrate increased effectiveness of helicopter and ground unit teams over ground unit teams alone in the apprehension of persons committing Part I (major) crimes. To include faster response times, more arrests, and more convictions.
- 2. Increase citizens' feelings of security, and personal safety both at home and on streets.
- 3. Demonstrate improved patrol observation abilities day and night.
- Reduce the number of Part I (major) crimes by 5 percent from past levels through the use of the deterrent capabilities of helicopter patrol.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>29</sup>William Cochran, "Police Helicopter Unit," Subgrant Evaluation Report to Office of Criminal Justice Programs, 1975, p. 2.

Cochran specifies that stratified random samples of pre-test car response data was obtained for comparison to test responses. This comparison demonstrated an increase in response time and arrest rates for the helicopter ground teams with the conviction rate remaining the same.<sup>30</sup>

The security goal was tested by pre-helicopter patrol and post-helicopter patrol question surveys made through random phone interviewing. The questions asked were:

Pre-test--"Do you think the Lansing Police Helicopter patrols will make you feel more secure and protected?"

Post-test--"Do you think the Lansing Police Helicopter patrols make you feel more secure and protected?"

Pre-test Results:		8	N
	Yes	46.7	164
	No	21.1	74
	Uncertain	32.2	113
Post-test Results:		8	N
	Yes	62.3	226
	No	20.1	73
	Uncertain	17.6	64

Cochran believes that the increase in believers was occasioned by publicity, speeches and other public relations efforts<sup>31</sup> and a pre-test, post-test of citizen awareness of the program using the same interview methods.

> <sup>30</sup>Ibid., p. 3. <sup>31</sup>Ibid., pp. 9-10.

Cochran reports that helicopters on patrol generally observe more significant events than cars.<sup>32</sup> However, the methods used to demonstrate this claim are subject to charges of lack of validity caused by bias in comparing car service to helicopter service.

Cochran notes that the goal of reducing Part I crime by 5 percent was not attained but notes that the local rate of +1.6 percent was lower than the national average of +17 percent. He feels that the upward trend of crime has demonstrably been broken by the addition of helicopters to the Lansing crime fighting team.<sup>33</sup>

Cochran's report addresses the important facet of community acceptance which has been touched on in some earlier reports. It seems to be a first step in starting such a program to sell it to government administrators as well as to the public. This fact may account for much of the chase and catch press releases in some programs. Lansing data are in Table 26.

> <sup>32</sup>Ibid., pp. 15-24. <sup>33</sup>Ibid., p. 25.

Table	26Lansing,	Michigan	Police	Five Year	History of
	Part I Ci	rimes for	Third,	Fourth, a	and First
	Quarters	, *			

	1970-71	1971-72	1972-73	1973-74	1974-75
3rd Quarter	2,273	2,364	1,659	1.915	2.098
4th Quarter	3,477	3,666	3,281	2,931	3.098
l <b>st</b> Quarter	3,266	3,078	2,341	2,442	2,210
Total	9,016	9,108	7,281	7,288	7,406
Change	• • •	+92	-1,827	+7	+118
% Change	• • •	+1.0%	-20%	+0.1%	+1.6%

\*Data from Cochran, "Police Helicopter Unit," p. 28. This comparison arises because of an evaluation period covering parts of two different years.

# Los Angeles, California

The Los Angeles Police department (1974 summary) reports that the department was expanding helicopter patrol in March of 1975 to 75 percent of the city. The report notes that in 1974 the department deviated from previously proven patrol methodology, in order to compensate for the planned 1975 patrol vehicles to respond to calls for service outside of their assigned area. The expanded coverage reduced available patrol time, with less attention being given to identified crime problems in assigned areas. As a result of this, the report states, repressible crime in helicopter areas was not reduced for the first time in six years.<sup>34</sup>

The report goes on to state that responses to officer requests, and radio and station calls in the new areas increased 103 percent and arrest participation in those areas increased by 147 percent while total arrest

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>34</sup>Los Angeles Police--Air Support Division, 1974 Summary, p. 14.

participation in regular helicopter areas was reduced slightly. And, the report adds, helicopter effectiveness was demonstrated, in spite of expansion problems, by helicopter crews being involved in one arrest for every 6.3 radio calls answered. The report predicts that 1975 results will show an improvement over 1974 as the newly trained expansion personnel gain in effectiveness and ground personnel continue to develop their ability to utilize the patrol air team, and the year 1976 will, more than ever before, demonstrate the true value of airborne police patrol.<sup>35</sup>

The report from Los Angeles also details that the helicopters contributed about the same percentage of regular patrol to the flight program in 1974 as in 1973. Total activity increased over 1973 by a slight margin but it is noted that radio calls were down by about 15 percent but total activity was statistically increased by the addition of 3799 officer calls, a category which came into use in 1973. It would be interesting to discover why this category sprang into being and increased so rapidly.<sup>36</sup>

This report also details the arrest and recovered missing vehicle statistics which reveal the loss, explained earlier, due to expansion. Los Angeles defines repressible crimes as burglary, robbery, auto theft, and BTFMV (Burglary

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>35</sup>Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup>Ibid., p. 8.

Theft From Motor Vehicle) and reveals statistics which indicate a higher number of those crimes in helicopter areas than in non-helicopter areas. Finally, the report details total cost of the helicopter program at \$2,746,391, which is an increase of 59 percent over 1974, caused by including employee benefits in the cost of 1974 program as well as facing increased salaries, more personnel, and higher maintenance costs.<sup>37</sup>

All in all, the Los Angeles report for 1974 predicts a bright future for the helicopter in law enforcement in the Los Angeles area including an increased ability to deter and prevent crime. Los Angeles data are in Tables 27 and 28.

<sup>37</sup>Ibid., pp. 9-15.

Area	Burglary	Robbery	Auto Theft	BTFMV**
Southwest	+5.3%	+ 1.6%	+ 8.4%	+15.8%
Newton	-2.9%	- 1.9%	- 1.0%	- 8.2%
Northeast	-1.4%	+16.0%	2%	+ 3.2%
Hollenbeck	+4.98	+18.8%	+ 4.9%	+ 7.3%
West Valley	-8.8%	- 7.5%	+12.6%	+ 2.1%
Astro Patrolled Areas	4%	+ 2.0%	+ 5.3%	+ 4.6%
Non-Astro Patrolled Areas	-2.5%	- 1.3%	+ 1.3%	+ 4.6%
All 17 Patrol Areas Including the Astro Areas	-2.0%	3%	+ 2.5%	+ 4.6%

Table 27.--Los Angeles Police Comparison of Repressible Crime in Helicopter and Non-Helicopter Patrol Areas Between 1973 and 1974.\*

Note: The percentage of change in reported crimes between 1973 and 1974, in those areas patrolled by helicopter, is shown in this table. This percentage is listed by crime type for each area patrolled. It is also listed by the total of all helicopter patrolled areas combined for comparison with non-patrolled areas and the City as a whole.

\*Data from Los Angeles Police--Air Support Division, 1974 Summary, p. 12.

**\*\*Burglary Theft From Motor Vehicle.** 

		Value	Arrests
ASTRO 227 Vehicles Recovered (\$1,095/Car FBI "Uniform Crime Report," 1973)		\$ 248,565	321
Administrative Narcotics Division Narcotics Confiscated: Marijuana551,171 gms. Cocaine4,645 gms. Heroin17,335 gms. Angel Dust (PCP)83 lbs. LSD6,036 units Amphetamines2,497,100 units Barbituates80,000 units	\$ 794,798 1,123,587 11,302,425 3,600,000 10,000 450,000 40,000		
Cash	2,163	\$17,323,883	149
Burglary-Auto Theft Division Property Recovered		11,800	19
Robbery-Homicide Division		23,325	9
Special Investigation Section		ø	1
Administrative Vice Division		ø	11
Hollenbeck Investigative Division		200	2
Wilshire Area-Vice		700 \$17,608,473	<u>6</u> 197

h

Table 28.--Los Angeles Police Report of Special Helicopter Investigative Flights as to Productivity.\*

Note: This information was obtained directly from the various investigative units using the helicopter. As with all statistics which relate to the effectiveness of helicopters in law enforcement, it is the team effort between air and ground units that is being evaluated. Included with the investigative recapitulation are totals of ASTRO recovered vehicles.

\*Data from Los Angeles Police--Air Support Division, 1974 Summary, p. 13.

# Warren, Michigan

The Warren, Michigan police (Mooneyham, 1975) report that the helicopter unit was flown city wide but experienced a loss of flying time due to mechanical problems and an accident. The report goes on to state that, as flying time was increased the crimes of breaking and entering, as well as robbery, decreased. During the period of increase in flying time the incidence of arrests also increased. <sup>38</sup> However, because of the unevenness of application causing

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>38</sup>Dan Mooneyham, Warren, <u>Michigan Police Helicopter</u> <u>Use Report</u>, 1975, p. 2. Additionally, it might be here noted that Warren, Michigan adjoins part of Detroit and is among a group of suburbs in that area which suffer from the "crime shift" problem. Cities in this category everywhere will find it difficult to stabilize some of the police processes because of a lack of coordination in communications and record keeping, along with a multitude of police problems which need, and under the present multi-city segmentation, cannot get, a thorough research for standardization of process and centralization of certain facilities.

an imbalance in statistics, the Warren report statistics can only hint at the effect of helicopter patrol.

Mooneyham makes the interesting observation that helicopter use as a police tool has unlimited potential for those areas of 36 square miles or more and a population in excess of 100,000. Mooneyham does not say why these parameters of use are selected. He further reports that a successful helicopter program requires that ground units be trained how to use helicopters and that the civilian population be educated as to the helicopter services available to them.<sup>39</sup>

## San Bernardino County

San Bernardino County (Jagerson, 1975) reports that the helicopter patrol program provides coverage to nine communities within the county as well as to the county area. Cost is predicated on the size of the community and the Part I crimes in the community. Jagerson reports that a public survey indicates 95.2 percent of all area citizens want the helicopter patrol and 97 percent of the police officers of all participating cities want the patrol continued.

Jagerson reports that the patrol has logged over 44,000 activities and 1048 arrests and costs each citizen

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>39</sup>Ibid., p. 6.

58¢ per year. Jagerson makes no claim in this report that helicopter patrol prevents crime.<sup>40</sup>

# Pasadena, California

The Pasadena, California police (1975) provide in their report some interesting definitions of terms:

1. Team: Police pilot, observer, and helicopter assigned to patrol operations during any regular helicopter watch. 2. Patrol: Flight hours by the "team" during patrol functions. (5 hour optimum average per 8-hour watch.) 3. Watch: 8 duty hours = 5 patrol hours. 4. Down Time: Team patrol time lost due to mechanical, radio, weather, or insufficient personnel factors. 5. Radio Call: Those calls for service, broadcast to ground units, to which the helicopter responds. 6. Valid Detail: Those radio calls and/or observations to which the helicopter responds where, in fact, a crime has been committed and a suspect is either outstanding or taken into custody at the scene. 7. Non-Valid Detail: An unfounded incident, false alarm, reclass to non-criminal incident, etc., can be originated Section States in the

as a radio call or observation.
8. Observations: An activity for ground units initiated by the helicopter team based solely upon observation of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>40</sup>Terry D. Jagerson, <u>San Bernardino County Helicop</u>ter Program, January 9, 1976, Letter to author.

ground activity which appears suspicious. This need not result in an arrest. The act of requesting a ground unit to investigate and directing it to the location is an "observation" activity.

- 9. Arrests: Credit for an arrest can be claimed:
  - a. When the activity is observed and the arrest initiated by the helicopter team (observation arrests).
  - b. When the helicopter arrives at the scene prior to ground units and either contains the suspect(s) or maintains surveillance of the suspect(s) and directs ground units to him.

NOTE: Merely being in the area does not qualify. Contact with the ground units and an active part in the handling of the activity are necessary to claim participation in an arrest.

Beyond these definitions, the Pasadena police present statistics of activities which are largely founded on these definitions. The report makes no claim to deterring or preventing crime through the use of helicopter patrol other than noting it is a useful and active patrol tool.<sup>41</sup>

### Maryland

The Maryland State police (1976) report that the helicopter is highly valued in traffic patrol. The use of

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>41</sup>Pasadena Police Department, Helicopter Section Monthly Reports, July 1974 through November 1975.

helicopters for criminal work is in providing support whenever it is needed to pursue escaping prisoners or persons escaping from a crime scene. Area searches for stolen property or other contraband as well as surveillance of suspected persons or vehicles are other uses for which the Maryland State police helicopter may be summoned. The report further mentions that the vehicle is useful as an aerial photo platform, but makes no statement that the use of helicopters has deterred or prevented crime in the area.<sup>42</sup>

A THE PART OF A PARTY OF

## Washington, D.C.

Washington, D.C. (1973) reports a reduction in crime in areas patrolled by helicopters as compared to projected predictions of the amount of crime to be expected. In other words, the crime reduction is computed by comparison with the <u>expected</u> amount of crime without the helicopter.

The prediction formula resulted in some cases where the prevented crime was higher than the expected crime, which is puzzling, to say the least.

Additionally, the report shows that total operating cost of a helicopter for one year is \$132,460 and for a scout car \$90,7774 for one year. Thus the cost for

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>42</sup>Gary E. Moore, letter to author and report of Maryland State Police Aviation Unit, January 7, 1976.

operating three helicopters is the same as for 4.7 scout cars. This is justification arithmetic.

Since this study embraces only segments of months, or fragmented time periods, and that only from September 1971 through March 1972, the report will not be dealt with any further in this study.<sup>43</sup>

# The Young Evaluations of Four Helicopter Programs

The Arthur Young Co. (1974) reported evaluation of four California helicopter projects for the Office of Criminal Justice Planning (OCJP) of the Law Enforcement Administration. The four projects were funded by O.C.J.P.<sup>44</sup>

The evaluation concerned the following projects:

### Title

#### Agency

E.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE OWNER OF THE OWNER OF THE

San Diego County Sheriff

ASTREA (Aerial Support to Regional Enforcement Agencies)

Ventura County Helicopter Program

Helicopter

San Bernardino County

Ventura County Sheriff

Project Co-op (Crime Oriented-Optimum Patrol) Kern County

Eleven major objectives were identified:

1. Increase the effectiveness of search and rescue operations in remote areas

<sup>43</sup>Metropolitan Police Department, Washington, D.C., Crime Reduction Through Aerial Patrol (Washington, D.C.: National Technical Information Service, 1973).

<sup>44</sup>Arthur Young and Co., <u>Final Report: Evaluation of</u> <u>OCJP Funded Helicopter Patrol Projects</u> (Sacramento, California: OCJP, 1974). 2. Reduce or slow the rate of growth in the crime rate

- 3. Enhance officer safety
- 4. Improve response time to crimes in progress calls
- 5. Increase apprehension of criminal suspects
- 6. Provide medical aid and evacuation services
- 7. Assist other law enforcement agencies
- 8. Reduce seriousness of civil disorders
- 9. Increase surveillance effectiveness in specified areas for specific offenses.

F

10. Provide aid during natural disasters

11. Provide the public with a greater sense of security The evaluation of enhanced officer safety and increased public sense of security were done by means of questionnaire. This method is at least slightly suspect because of the type of question asked. For instance,

Do you, as a field officer, feel more secure while performing certain hazardous field functions if the helicopter is present? $^{45}$ 

It seems reasonable to suppose that the respondent to such a question meant he felt more secure while other officers were present and if they were present in any vehicle or without one, the officer would more than likely be visited by feelings of increased security.

Generally, it is observed that the question, in this study, of community security follows questions pertaining to awareness of the program and personal observation

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>45</sup>Ibid., Exhibits I, A-IV, BII, CII-EII.

of the program. Then the respondent is asked if he or she feels more secure as a result and does he or she favor continuing the program. It would be interesting, if the first two questions dealt with the cost of the program, to measure the public feeling of security in question number three.

The Young report suggests a method of measuring cost-effectiveness based on how well the helicopter "operating in its regular mode" accomplished program objectives compared to how well these would be accomplished by adding patrol units. By the term "operating in its regular mode" means with a patrol unit, or surface car. Activity importance ratings  $(A_1)$  were based on three factors:

- Activities questionnaire to certain personnel in each department including the sheriff, department planning bureau, patrol bureau chief, project director, and helicopter pilots
- 2. Original project goals
- 3. Qualitative judgement of the consultant

From a list of activities formed around the eleven major objectives, eight were selected as most important by questionnaire rating. A total of forty points was distributed over the activities with weights determined by:

- 1. Scored rankings in survey
- 2. Project objectives
- 3. Qualitative judgement

Costs were based on both fixed and variable costs to arrive at both monthly and annual operation cost levels for both helicopter and patrol car use.

The final numeric index was the weighted relative (helicopter with patrol car vs added patrol units) effectiveness rating. For each activity, the helicopter with car vs the additional patrol cars received a relative effectiveness rating:

- 1. Very effective (4 points)
- 2. Effective (3 points)
- 3. Moderately effective (2 points)
- 4. Slightly effective (1 point)
- 5. Not effective (0 points)

The determination of the effectiveness was built around the activities weights formula shown above and as  $W_{H1} - W_{HN}$ .

Thus, the cost-effectiveness formulas where:

- A<sub>1</sub> A<sub>N</sub> = Activity importance rating, i.e., crime incidence, response time, community attitudes, etc.
- $W_{H1} W_{HN} = W_{eighted relative effectiveness of helicopter patrol activities (A<sub>1</sub> A<sub>N</sub>)$

then the final formula was:

$$A_1.W_{H1} + A_2.W_{H2}...A_NW_{HN} = Operating Effectiveness46$$

But the most telling part of the Young report is in the evaluation of the effect of helicopter patrol on crime. The report states simply that there exists no statistical base for comparison. A general lack of current, as well as historical, data for patrol areas precludes any evaluation of the use of helicopters in those four projects as a means of deterring or preventing crime.<sup>47</sup>

Here, again, is an example of a search for data base which finally resorts to the use of judgemental factors to reach summations. While the formula here points the way to eventual evaluation, the mixing of components portends an incorrect or inconclusive result.

Three final notations of city programs are entered here because they indicate the continuing problem of the lack of evaluation of helicopter use to prove it as a means of deterring or preventing crime in relation to its cost to the community.

# Fairfax County, Virginia

Fairfax County, Virginia (1976), provides an interesting view of one area's helicopter experience. An evaluation of the program by the Chief of Police in December of 1974 showed that the helicopter in use, an Enstrom F28A, had no carrying capacity beyond its two member crew and thus was not capable of conducting rescue or mercy missions. In addition, this vehicle was stated in

47 Ibid., pp. 5 and 34.

the report to be unsuited for regular patrol and only useful on short term surveillance or vehicle chases.

The report continued to detail repair and maintenance problems from the free receipt of the helicopter in May of 1972 until the time of evaluation. The report further notes that other police agencies which use helicopters were surveyed and the literature was reviewed. Several points became apparent:

None of the departments contacted was operating with one helicopter and one crew. All had at least two helicopters and three crews to assure the availability of the support the air units may give to ground units. Most had more.

All departments using helicopters devoted substantial mission time to commuter traffic watches, a task performed by private or other public agencies in Metropolitan Washington.

No department said it had been able to reduce the number, or limit the expansion of ground units on patrol, as a result of helicopter patrol.

None could provide hard data analysis to demonstrate the impact of helicopter patrol on the incidence of crime or the agency's ability to apprehend law breakers. Several cited specific cases. But no pattern could be established.

This report went on to note that the helicopter program had not been given a fair test as an element of patrol due to lack of availability. Additionally, it was given that this craft cost \$48 per hour to use. The report recommends retaining the helicopter for special uses but advised against expanding the program.<sup>48</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>48</sup>William L. Durrer, in letter to County Executive Robert W. Wilson, December 10, 1974.

The report became moot because the helicopter crashed before the report reached the Board of Supervisors. Fiscal restraints caused rejection of replacement, although the Director of Planning and Research for the county still considers the helicopter as effective in crime deterrence.<sup>49</sup>

# Richmond, California

The Richmond report (1975) notifies the study that the helicopter program, which was funded by L.E.A.A. and used two Hughes 300-C helicopters for anti-crime patrol, was discontinued after the grant was terminated. One helicopter has been sold and the other is for sale.

The report goes on to state that the program was ineffective as to prevention of crime and too costly to maintain. $^{50}$ 

# San Francisco, California

The San Francisco police department received LEAA grant #71A06R021 in the amount of \$18,934 on June 29, 1971, for a helicopter program to run from July 1, 1971, through June 30, 1972. This grant was for the purpose of reinforcing the San Francisco's law enforcement program by

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>49</sup>Letter from Jared D. Stout, Director of Planning and Research, Fairfax County to author, January 7, 1976.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>50</sup>Richmond Report, Letter from John Neely, Acting Captain, Patrol Bureau to author, December 22, 1975.

replacement of one of two helicopters. The vehicle being replaced had crashed.

In response to the questionnaire from the author of this study in December 1975, the Chief of Police of San Francisco reported that the San Francisco police department does not operate helicopters.<sup>51</sup>

The author learned, in a subsequent interview with a San Francisco officer who is an aide to Chief George Gain, as well as a former member of the helicopter unit, that the San Francisco police own two helicopters but do not use them. The helicopters have been adjudged as being too expensive to operate and maintain in relation to results obtained in crime deterrence and prevention.<sup>52</sup>

#### Summary

Chapter IV has presented a description of the data obtained in this study from the four sources:

- 1. Review of the literature
- 2. Mitre Corporation survey
- 3. Author survey
- 4. Departmental evaluations

The literature has served to describe the philosophy of the theory of visibility and mobility in patrol as well to trace the history of the theory to the present day.

<sup>51</sup>Letter from Charles R. Gain, Chief of Police, San Francisco, California, to author, February 11, 1976.

<sup>52</sup>Telephone interview of Patrolman Louis Sylvestri, by author, March 31, 1976. The Mitre Corporation data, also known as the Chester survey, has furnished data concerning the use and capabilities of airborne vehicles as well as providing cost data about acquisition and maintenance.

The author's survey data has been combined in some instances with the Chester survey data to provide a complete inventory of all helicopters in use in police agencies in the United States. These data also inventory cost comparison material which should prove extremely useful to future researchers.

Additionally, Chapter IV includes area and population information that can be valuable to tests and evaluations on any police helicopter patrol program.

Finally, Chapter IV provides a look at some methods of program evaluation as devised and perceived by the users of helicopters in police patrol. Some of the cities included in the author's survey responded with reports which try to evaluate the program of using helicopters in police patrol. While none of these evaluation conclusions are generalizable, because in the author's view they lack validity, they do present a view of formulated efforts to test and evaluate such programs.

Chapter V will summarize the study, discuss the findings and their implications for the future, and try to devise usable hypotheses generated by the study with recommendations for the future planning of police programs in training and education.

and the second second

### CHAPTER V

# SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS

In the opening chapter the purpose and scope of the study were defined. It was aimed at providing a description of those methods and theories that rely on the belief that visibility and mobility have a direct effect on crime by deterring or preventing criminal actions. The intention was to furnish some useful data for researchers who may wish to test and evaluate these methods and theories.

The study also proposed to provide some information as to the influence of these methods and theories on those who manage police agencies as well as those who train and educate policemen.

Since the theory of visibility and mobility as a deterrent to and prevention of, crime is related to speed of movement it was noted that the study would focus on the fastest of all police patrol vehicles, the helicopter.

The study was motivated by consideration of two underlying assumptions:

1. That certain methods and theories of crime deterrence and prevention which are in use throughout the

field of Criminal Justice, and which form a basis for a good deal of the training and education in that field, are founded on tradition and "common sense" value judgements and are as yet untested.

2. That it is vitally important, especially in view of the nation's rising crime totals, that research be directed toward these certain methods and theories in order that police administrators, trainers, and educators may have the benefit of proven practices to use in their professions.

Following these assumptions the author set out to answer the following questions:

1. Considering the historical basis of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention, what is the present status of the theory?

The historical background of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention and its beginning is important. Any consideration of the theory in its present state relates to the origin of the theory and the philosophy connnected with it.

2. Is this theory based on untested assumptions, has it received credibility through traditional use while being carried on by the medium of training and educational programs in Criminal Justice? The literature of the profession of policing provides a source which will indicate whether or not this theory has ever been subjected to scientific testing and evaluation or whether it has been granted "common sense" value acceptance and passed on traditionally.

3. In police programs which use and promote the theory of visibility and mobility in crime deterrence and prevention, does a data base exist which can provide a starting point for future research aimed at testing and evaluation of this theory?

It will be useful to provide a thorough examination of some of the data, views, and methods of test and evaluation in use by police departments to determine if there exists a data base which might be used in future scientific test and evaluation of police programs relating to crime deterrence and prevention.

It was also considered vitally important that all questions be studied and answered because the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol to crime deterrence and prevention is an important part of the curriculum of police training and education programs. The theory must be placed in proper perspective so that, if it is continued in use, it will be as a theory which has been scientifically tested and evaluated in use. The study questions lead to the answers to problems posed at the outset of the study.

Chapter I looks at the setting of the study and discusses the philosophy of police patrol as a means of deterring and preventing crime. This chapter has provided the basis in history for police methods and theories in regard to the belief that visibility and mobility can, and do, deter and prevent crime. This included a discussion of the beginning of the traditional passage of police beliefs from one generation of administrator, trainer, and educator to another. Because of the continually occurring passage of these beliefs, they grew larger in credibility without evaluation or testing.

Chapter II offers a review of the literature which traces the solidifying of the credibility of those police methods and theories. The literature review demonstrates that the belief in visibility and mobility became more acceptable with the advent of mechanical contrivances such as bicycles and then automobiles to increase the speed quotient of the police.

The chapter details instances were pioneer police administrators, trainers, and educators virtually became ecstatic at the prospect of completely eradicating crime from society with the newly discovered speed capability.

Well known, even revered, police trainers and educators like August Vollmer and William Rutledge spread the gospel of visibility and mobility to all areas of the police world in America. O. W. Wilson, a famous police administrator as Superintendent of the Chicago Police

Department and an educator at the University of California, as well as the author of several volumes concerning police training and education, was one of the foremost disciples of the theory.

Some of the pioneer administrators, trainers, and educators even supposed that fewer policemen would be needed because of innovations like cars and radios which increased visibility and mobility.

Chapter III displays the sources and methods used to gain data for description. The chapter notes that these data were gathered primarily from a review of pertinent literature and from the material in two extensive questionnaire surveys. One of these surveys was conducted by a national evaluation organization, the Mitre Corporation, and the author was granted permission to use the unpublished data. This is called the Chester Survey. The other survey was conducted by the author. These questionnaire surveys are the prime source of data for this study, since there is scant published information concerning the use of helicopters in police crime prevention patrol.

This chapter notes that the literature of the profession would reveal the philosophy of the theory of visibility and mobility in police patrol as well as furnish information as to its growth and development. The widely read books about police systems, including the most popular text books on police training and education were examined, described, and excerpted.

Chapter IV describes how the Chester survey and the author survey have been used in some instances to provide a combined inventory of police helicopters which include both operational capability specification and cost data. This is a unique inventory which details data not found in one place in any other publication.

This chapter is involved in a description of the data obtained from all sources. Additionally, this chapter also provides compilations and categorization of data by the author for more facile access by future researchers and other students. This chapter provides the kind of data that are so necessary to a description of the patrol process of crime deterrence and prevention which makes use of helicopters.

Chapter IV also looks at the attempts made by several police organizations to evaluate the results of using helicopters in crime preventive patrol. These evaluation efforts bear directly on the problem studied here and will provide a source of evaluation methodology for researchers. Some of the methodology will be discussed in the conclusions at the end of this study.

The questions which were posed at the beginning of the study have been answered throughout the study.

Question one asked:

 Considering the historical basis of the theory that relates visibility and mobility in police patrol

to crime deterrence and prevention, what is the present status of the theory?

This historical basis was demonstrated in Chapter I with a recounting of the earliest known history of police patrol in England. From the "Watch and Ward" system of Edward I (1272-1307), through the Bow Street Runners or "Thief Takers" of Henry Fielding in 1748 through the forerunner of modern policing, the Bobbies of Sir Robert Peel's Metropolitan police in 1829, the theory of visibility and mobility became an accepted fact in police departments.

Those same methods and theories were brought to this country and carried on in the same fashion as in the mother country, including the virtually useless "Watch and Ward" system which relied heavily on the belief that if the "presence" of a watcher was made evident enough by some form of noise, criminals would not ply their trade.

The review of the literature in Chapter II also amply illuminates the basis in history in this country when it is noted that leading police administrators, trainers, and educators such as Orlando W. Wilson, August Vollmer and William P. Rutledge carry on this theory in the early part of the twentieth century.<sup>1</sup>

Leading writers in the police field also carry on the transfer of the theory to the present day. It is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup>See Wilson, supra p. 32; Vollmer, supra p. 31; and Rutledge, supra p. 30.

notable that authors like Vern Folley, Samuel G. Chapman, Raymond Clift, and Harry Caldwell, writing in the 1960s and 1970s, are still espousing the theory of visibility and mobility as effective in deterring and preventing crime.<sup>2</sup>

Question two asked:

2. Is this theory (of visibility and mobility in patrol as deterring or preventing crime) based on untested assumptions and has it received credibility through traditional use while being carried on by the medium of training and educational programs in Criminal Justice?

This question was answered in both Chapters I and II. A recounting of police history reveals no testing procedures that were ever devised or attempted. A review of the literature illustrates many instances of police administrators, trainers, and educators promoting these theories repeatedly, and often using the exact language of another in the profession. The literature reveals this passing of the theory from hand to hand and area to area.

Both Chapters I and II provide information which indicates that there is no known test of these theories. Many leading research sources state repeatedly that testing and evaluation of these theories is non-existent. The

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup>See Chapman, supra p. 36; Folley, supra p. 40; Clift, supra p. 39; and Caldwell, supra p. 41.

President's Commission on Law Enforcement and the Administration of Criminal Justice decries the total lack of scientific research for test and evaluation of police methods and theories.<sup>3</sup>

While the literature is relatively silent on the subject of higher education in regard to the theory of visibility and mobility, it is important to note that many of the pioneer police administrators, in this country, like Vollmer and O. W. Wilson, were also educators and authors of police text books.

Tenney, in remarking on the curriculum of higher education programs in Criminal Justice, reports that textbooks which promote this theory constitute a large segment of the literature of those programs.<sup>4</sup>

3. Does a data base exist in police programs which promote the theory of visibility and mobility as effective in deterring or preventing crime, which can provide a starting point for future research in evaluation and testing of the theory?

Chapter IV provides a unique and complete inventory of helicopters in use in police patrol including performance specifications and cost data.

<sup>4</sup>See Tenney, supra p. 75.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup>President's Commission, supra p. 46; see also James Q. Wilson, supra p. 42; American Bar Association, supra p. 45; Larson, supra p. 45; National Institute, supra p. 46.

The chapter also furnishes data concerning the areas where helicopters are in use such as size and population density. Information of this nature is valuable to any future test and evaluation efforts.

Additionally, Chapter IV provides some data received from users which indicates their perceptions in regard to problem areas and also in regard to perceived evaluations.

Chapter IV also includes some test and evaluation data which was provided by certain of the respondents in answer to a request of the researcher.

Thus Chapter IV does provide an answer to question number three. The description of the data leads to a conclusion that information is available which will provide a foothold for future researchers, when it is considered that all of the data described in Chapter IV is available plus all of the information in every police department's regular crime and performance reports to use in any future scientific test and evaluation.

# Findings

An overall view of this study reveals the emergence of the following series of findings:

1. Some police departments tend to lean toward production statistics which are generally unrelated to proof of effectiveness in deterring and preventing crime.

One of the most common objectives cited in some of these justification type evaluations involves officers' security. It must be alarming to citizens when a police department, citing the major objectives of a very expensive anti-crime program, declares that the first objective is officer security.

In addition to this evaluation dilemma, the evaluators create another by using a questionnaire approach to prove officer security which asks, in a typical example:

do you, as a field officer, feel more secure while performing certain hazardous field functions if the helicopter is present?

and

As a supervisor/administrator, have you observed that field officers display an increased sense of security if the helicopter is present in certain field functions?<sup>5</sup>

The percentage of affirmative answers to this kind of question is highly predictable but the questions leave a plethora of related unanswered questions which might ask if the officer also felt more secure if a scout car were present. Or how does a supervisor detect an increased sense of security in a subordinate?

Evaluations which sample citizen feelings of increased security because of helicopter patrol or that ask citizen opinion of whether the program should be

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup>Both reports appear in all four evaluations in the Young Report, supra p. 191. See also Simonsen, "An Evaluation of Columbus, Ohio Helicopter Patrol," supra p. 172.
continued are of suspect value in defining the impact of the program in deterring or preventing crime.

2. Some police departments resist change vigorously and continue to rely on "common sense" values in programs to deter and prevent crime.

One effort to test and evaluate police patrol in regard to its effect on crime, the Kansas City Preventive Patrol Experiment, met with this resistance. This test was conducted in a scientific manner and is indicative of what can be done by the police community to test and evaluate the theory of visibility and mobility in police patrol. Kansas City used fifteen police beats in the experiment. In five of these beats there was double, and even triple police patrol and "presence," in five there was no patrol, only request response, and in the third group of five beats there was normal patrol and service.

Among the findings in the Kansas City study, one most pertinent here was that, at the end of a one year experiment, the crime incidence in all three sectors of five beats each remained virtually the same as before. While this test is neither final nor generalizable and was subject to almost immediate critical reaction, it does point the way to scientific testing of police methods and theories.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup>Kelling, supra p. 52. See also the criticism in Davis, supra p. 54.

3. Some police evaluators have a tendency to grossly exaggerate the benefits of new police programs. The introduction of the helicopter provides an example. The ability of a helicopter in such categories as recovery of stolen property and location of contraband seems to be frequently overstated. The Los Angeles report credits enormous capability in these categories to their helicopter patrol.<sup>7</sup>

4. A perusal of the evaluation system used in some police departments reveals that this justification effort leads to unusual cost comparisons between helicopters and scout cars. The final tabulation often indicates that it costs more per arrest by scout cars than those by helicopter.

Detroit equated the cost of patrol units with arrests and arrived at a formula which put the cost of arrest at \$195.00 each for the helicopter as against \$420.00 each for a scout car. This amazing figure was arrived at by showing that surface units patrol one million hours at \$22.00 per hour while a helicopter patrols only 1930 hours at \$50.00 per hour.<sup>8</sup> Nowhere does Detroit explain that a helicopter crew cannot make an arrest without the aid of a scout car. This report is probably typical of evaluation reports which are made with a view of justification of a program and not proof of its value.

<sup>7</sup>See Los Angeles, supra p. 184.

<sup>8</sup>See Detroit, supra p. 167.

5. Statistics which border on the incredible are brought to light, such as those which use a complicated amortization scale to show that the total purchase and operating cost of a helicopter is very close to that of a scout car. It usually goes unmentioned that the long use of helicopters is caused by the high cost of purchase and maintenance.

The Washington, D.C. police report is typical of the report which attempts to show that helicopters and scout cars are almost equal in total cost. The statistics used are invalid because they are incomplete and cover only segments of time periods.<sup>9</sup>

6. Some of the helicopter program evaluations revert to the theory that, because of its speed, the helicopter can do as much as two, three, four, five, or more scout cars. This recalls the days when pioneer police administrators predicted that a car with two men and a radio could do the same amount of police work as five men on foot. A continuation of the use of this formula should have reduced the ratio of police personnel to population, but it has not. The Santa Monica program failed to fulfill the promise of added patrol capability.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>9</sup>See Washington, D.C., supra p. 189.

<sup>10</sup>See Earl Reinhold, "Helicopter Patrol," supra p. 67. 7. And finally, it is notable that in some evaluations of police helicopter programs there is a tendency to devise complicated effectiveness and evaluation programs. These programs use such invalid components as judgemental factors or opinions of division personnel, to arrive at their conclusions. In addition, some of these evaluations make direct comparisons between scout car and helicopter delivery of service when it should be evident that the mixing of incomparable respondents gives almost total invalidity to the comparison.

The Young evaluations, which cover four separate helicopter patrol programs present an interesting picture in regard to the measurement of effectiveness against crime. These evaluations use a combination of factors which range from real (crime statistics) to imaginary (activity importance ratings which depend on "qualitative" judgement). In the final summation, however, the Young evaluations say that there is insufficient data provided to the evaluators to detect any effect on crime by helicopter patrol.<sup>11</sup>

The Tucson police also evaluated the cost effectiveness of the program by using four evaluation factors of which three were "opinions" or "judgements" of persons connected with the program.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup>See Tucson report, supra p. 160.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup>See Young, supra p. 190

#### Additional Findings

In Chapters II and IV there are continual documentations of instances wherein police departments seem to lean toward justification of unique patrol systems like the helicopter. These justification efforts carry over into the reports and tell of outcomes that have no bearing on the use of patrol helicopters in deterring or preventing crime.

For instance, while it is undoubtedly important to measure miles flown and reports turned in, these cannot be the sole measurement when the purpose for the process was cited as crime deterrence and prevention, especially since statistics show a continual rise in crime. This method of measurement has been compared by the author to the system of determining the amounts of brick and mortar used to measure the final comfort and utility of a house.

Another of the faults regularly associated with police evaluations of helicopter patrols is the tendency to conduct one-shot tests that fail to take into account the conditions surrounding the test area before and after. Frequently, the evaluators finish reports by admitting the possibility that the helicopter program has merely shifted the crime problem to another area, as in the Columbus, Ohio test of the helicopter patrol in that city.<sup>13</sup>

Helicopter evaluation reports also tend to make invalid comparison of response time by comparing the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup>See Simonsen, supra p. 172.

response time of a scout car to that of a helicopter while <u>airborne</u> as in the Tucson report. Flight preparation takes a considerable length of time.<sup>14</sup>

### Conclusions

These findings lead to two inescapable conclusions:

1. That police departments must begin to scrutinize the entire spectrum of law enforcement in relation to the police mission of deterring and preventing crime.

2. That police departments must discontinue the practice of "justification" evaluation of programs by testing and evaluating them scientifically.

Those programs which are retained because of invalid testing and evaluation procedure actually constitute a disservice to the citizens of the community.

This does not mean that programs are not worth retaining because of certain cosmetic value. An example is the mounted division, or horse bureau, of many police departments. These divisions have long ago ceased claiming any real police function, even crowd control, but are retained because the citizenry appreciate the cosmetic value of the bureau as a civic asset and are willing to pay for it.

The previously cited Kansas City Preventive Patrol Experiment is highly indicative of the ability of police

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup>See Tucson, supra p. 161.

departments to conduct scientific research. Certainly the ongoing life in a city provides the police departments and educational institutions of America with a laboratory situation. Those incidents which happen in a policecitizen-crime setting are part of the life of the area. The resources are present as part of all of the situation.

It is no longer acceptable to guess at what results might be or to attribute the results to certain causes just because it seems right to do so. Police experts can no longer sell the untested system to a community by using high sounding, traditional police jargon about depriving criminals of opportunity through police "presence."

The most obvious values to be credited to helicopter performance are their abilities to respond to a location rapidly and their use as an observation platform. Both of these values are also limited by the fact that the helicopter cannot usually do more than observe a condition of crime, even after rapid arrival at a location, and report to surface units who are able to take action. Nevertheless, these values are important and can be the real reasons for providing helicopter service. The use of helicopters as an ambulance vehicle more properly belongs to organizations using helicopters built for such service and not police vehicles.

Finally, the author has concluded, as a result of this study that James Q. Wilson was correct when he stated that a lack of proven methodology for testing law enforcement proposals was putting the nation in danger of turning a practical problem into an ideological one. Wilson noted that, in responding to the emotions aroused by crime, we dangerously oversell our ability to lower the crime rate. In order to get Congress to supply funds that <u>may</u> help produce a 5 percent reduction in auto thefts, we may have to promise a 20 percent reduction in murders.<sup>15</sup>

Certainly it is at least discouraging to police administrators when an urbanologist as highly respected as Jane Jacobs says:

The first thing to understand is that the public peace--the sidewalk and street peace--of cities is not kept primarily by the police, necessary as police are. It is kept primarily by an intricate, almost unconscious, network of voluntary controls and standards among the people themselves and enforced by the people themselves. . . No amount of police can enforce civilization where the normal, casual enforcement of it has broken down.

In some city areas--older public housing projects and streets with very high population turnover are often conspicuous examples--the keeping of public sidewalk law is left almost entirely to the police and special guards. Such places are jungles.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>15</sup>James Wilson, <u>Crime and Law Enforcement</u>, supra at p. 45.

<sup>16</sup>Jane Jacobs, <u>The Death and Life of Great American</u> Cities (New York: Random House, 1961), pp. 31-32.

#### Implications for Trainers and Educators

It does not necessarily follow that because a particular method or theory of crime deterrence or prevention fails to achieve positive results that no method or theory of crime deterrence will work. Nor does it follow that because a particular method or theory is untested that it should be abandoned. But it is logical to suppose that such a method or theory should be researched for evaluation and testing.

Without research, without evaluation and testing the police administrators, trainers, and educators are using and teaching the theory that visibility and mobility are deterring or preventing crime while this theory is based only on tradition and "common sense" values and may or may not be the crux of police patrol.

Yet, as Jacob reminds, police are necessary. Certainly as an alternative to chaos and anarchy but also in deterring and preventing crime. How great an impact police have on crime will be determined by the willigness of police administrators to join hands with institutions of higher education and begin to research, test, and evaluate programs which claim to deter or prevent crime.

Emerging from the research in this investigation, three implications appear which may have merit in the educational process of criminal justice. These are:

1. These programs must be tested by the use of principles subject to all of the rules of scientific experiment and testing. Generalization must spring from validity and not from tradition or "common sense."

2. Police administrators, trainers, and educators must realize that change is inevitable and can be a healthy experience of experiment and test. These administrators, trainers, and educators will have to articulate this belief to the communities of citizens and students that they serve.

3. Further, institutions of higher education must become an integral part of the search for police programs which truly deter and prevent crime. These institutions ought to establish and maintain an on-going umbilical cord relationship with police agencies to provide a continuous program of education and re-education of police personnel, administrators, trainers, and educators and also to provide research facilities and resources as part of the relationship.

#### Recommendations for Further Study

All police agencies should be involved with some form of self-examination with objective outside aid. This procedure should become a regular part of the police regimen. Statistics such as those generated in this study should be put to use in further study as part of the necessary cycle of test and evaluation.

This study has generated the following hypotheses:

1. Areas where police have enlarged their visibility and increased their speed in mobility to create an impression of omnipresence will have proportionately less incidence of crime than areas where police patrols have remained static.

2. Persons of criminal inclination in areas where police have enlarged their visibility and increased their speed in mobility to create an impression of omnipresence will tend to abandon their criminal plans more often than criminally inclined persons in areas with less police visibility and mobility.

3. Crime problems which are subjected to continuous cooperative research between police and academicians have more likelihood of solution than those which are left to police alone to solve.

Police practitioners must now seek the help of the academic research community to combine the resources of both in providing programs to test and evaluate police methods and theories.

The educators of the Criminal Justice programs can no longer afford to provide a curriculum which is based on untested theory. The test and evaluation programs must take precedents over traditional "nuts and bolts" curriculum until a proven body of material is ready for presentation to future practitioners.

This will involve some changes in the traditional stance of educators and policemen alike and cause them to approach the administrators and citizens of their communities with a unified determination which will assure that the police, who need the help, will ask for and accept it, and that the educators, who have the help to give, will proceed to give it.

APPENDICES

.

## APPENDIX A

AUTHOR SURVEY INSTRUMENT

•

.

### APPENDIX A

### AUTHOR SURVEY INSTRUMENT

.

# Questionnaire

	Department
Street	Zip Code
City	State
Phone:	Area Code:
County:	Township:
The governmental unit department is:	providing <u>salaries</u> for your
] 1. Village	4. County
2. City	5. State
3. Township	6. Other

Residential	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Agricultural	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Educational	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Military	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Governmental	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Industrial	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Natural Resource	es	(n	nir	nir	ıg,		Eoi	ces	sti	Y,	, e	etc	:.)	•	•	
Recreation-Touri	isn	n.	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	•	

- 3. What is the official population estimate of your jurisdiction?
- 4. What is the total number of miles of public roads and streets (paved and unpaved) and the square miles of land in your entire jurisdiction?

Miles of public roads \_\_\_\_\_

Square miles of land

5. What is the TOTAL budget for your department for the latest fiscal year?

Total budget for the latest year is \$\_\_\_\_\_

6. What is the TOTAL budget of your entire city, village, township, or county for the latest fiscal year?

Total budget for the latest year is \$\_\_\_\_\_

7. What is the actual number of all officers and civilians in your agency today?

(officers) (civilians)

8. How many items of the following mobile patrol equipment does your department own?

Cars	
Cycles	
Scooters	
Planes	
Helicopters	

9. Were any of these mobile items purchased by L.E.A.A. grants?

	( <u>number</u> )	NO
Cars ·		
Cycles		
Scooters		
Planes		
Helicopters		

10. If any helicopters were purchased through L.E.A.A. grants, did or will your department continue the program after expiration of the grant?

Yes		No	
-----	--	----	--

11. If your department has begun and discontinued a helicopter program under L.E.A.A. grant, was it because the program was:

a. ineffective?
b. too costly for results gained?
c. both a and b?
d. other reasons?

12. What type and capacity helicopters are in use in your department?



13. How are your department's helicopters utilized? (Please state amount of use in hours per month per unit in average 730 hour month.)

Patrol, general, including searches
Traffic, regular
Traffic, emergency
Medical, mercy, transport, rescue
Personnel transport
Other (please describe briefly)

- 14. How are your helicopter pilots chosen for duty?
  - Selected from department, then trained.
  - Selected pre-trained from department.
  - Selected pre-trained from outside department.

15. What are the rank and salaries of your helicopter pilots?

<u>No</u> .	Rank	Salary
What is the year?	total cost of housing	your helicopters per
In which of department p	the following reportin participate?	ng programs does your
Yes No		
	F.B.I. Uniform Crime	Report Program
	National Safety Counc Inventory	il Annual Traffic
	L.E.I.N. (Law Enforce Network)	ement Intelligence
Has your dep helicopter a	oartment prepared a sep activity?	parate report of

Mont	hly	Annua	<u>11y</u>
Yes	No	Yes	No

16.

17.

18.

19. Does your department use helicopters on general patrol during all time shifts?



20. Do you provide helicopter assistance to other police agencies or other units of government? (Total hours per month per unit.)

No.	Other Police	Other Government
Units	(hours)	(hours)

.

21. When using a helicopter in anti-crime patrol, do you use additional surface units to assist, or respond to, the helicopter?

Number of additional surface units per helicopter

22. Does your department believe that the use of the helicopter in anti-crime patrol has reduced street crime?

Yes		No	
-----	--	----	--

23. Does your department believe that helicopter use has reduced any particular category of crime?

Yes [	
-------	--

No		

- Category\_\_\_\_
- 24. If your department believes either 22 or 23 above, is there documentation to demonstrate?

Yes		No	
-----	--	----	--

25. Does your department consider the helicopter most valuable for:

**Traffic** 

Medical, mercy, treatment, rescue

Personnel transport

Other (specify briefly)

26. Has your helicopter program been specifically evaluated as to its relationship to crime?

Yes	No

10	
----	--

27. Has your program revealed instances in which helicopter patrol seems to shift the crime to areas outside the patrol perimeter?

Yes 🔲 .	No 🔲
---------	------

28. Has your helicopter program been evaluated as to cost per mission?

No 🗌

Yes		

29. Has your scout car program been evaluated as to cost per mission?



- 30. Will you please forward the information sought in questions 18, 24, 26, 27, 28, and 29, as well as this questionnaire (when completed) to the researcher in the enclosed, self-addressed, stamped envelope?
- 31. Will you please state briefly the general view of your department toward the use of helicopters in police service?

CHESTER SURVEY INSTRUMENT

.

APPENDIX B

#### APPENDIX B

#### CHESTER SURVEY INSTRUMENT

### Law Enforcement Assistance Administration L.E. Airborne Vehicle Survey

#### General Instructions for Completing This Form

- 1. Please respond to each question.
- 2. Where data are not available, enter NA.
- 3. Annual budget figures for your agency's airborne operations may be approximate.
- 4. Where your fiscal year is different from the Federal Government's fiscal year, simply provide your current airborne operations budget--the one you are working under in August 1975.

#### Agency/Interviewer Identification

- 1. Agency Name:
- 2. Address:
- 3. Person Responsible for Response:

Position:

Date of Response:

4. (If data obtained via telephone) name of MITRE interviewer:\_\_\_\_\_\_

Date of call:\_\_\_\_\_, 1975.

Call Back Necessary? Yes No If Yes, Explain

5.	Callback H	Results:				
6.	Date of Ca different	allback: from 4)	;	, 1975.	Interview	er (if
Air	borne Vehic	cle Inver	ntory			
7.	Aircraft i Helicopter	in Use by	y Agency	<b>?:</b>		
Man	ufacturer	Model	Year Mf'd	Year Acquired	Quantity	Military Surplus?
	Fixed Wing	 				
	Short Take	e-Off_and	  d Landin	ng (STOL)		
Тур	Other (Spe e	ecify) Mfr.		Model	Year Acquired	Quantity
<u>Usa</u> 8.	Average Fl	lying Ho	urs:			
	Helico Fixed STOL	opters Wing	ut 5 .		Hours	per month
	Other				<del>~~~~~</del>	

Percentage of Flight Time:	Day	Night
Helicopters		
Fixed Wing		
STOL		
Other		

10. Aircraft Availability Ratio By Type:

9.

Indicate the percent of time, on the average, that the type is available (e.g., ready to fly the mission) when scheduled or when required.

Availability in percent

Helicopters	
Fixed Wing	
STOL	
Other	

#### Mission Priority and Effectiveness by Type of Airborne Vehicle

11. Rate each applicable aircraft type on (1) its mission priority and (2) its mission effectiveness in Table A-1 on the following page.

Rate mission priority for each relevant aircraft type on the basis of "1" for highest priority, "2" for the next highest, and so on. Two or more missions may be given equal priority ratings. List only top 5 priorities.

Indicate "H" (for High), "M" (for Medium), or "L" (for Low) effectiveness. Absence of an effectiveness rating will be interpreted to mean that the vehicle is not used for the mission. Please add other missions, as applicable, in the space provided. (See illustrative example in Table A-1).

> Mission rating table on following page.

	Heli	copter	Helicopter			
Mission	Priority Rating	Effective- ness Rating	Priority Rating	Effecti <b>ve-</b> ness Rating		
Command Post		Н				
High Speed Chase		М				
Provide Intercept Data to Ground	1*	н				
Patrol Activities		Н				
General Surveillance	1*	Н				
Covert Surveillance		L				
Search Activities						
Fugitives	2	Н				
Vehicles	3	м				
Nighttime Patrol		М				
Security (Special Visitors, etc.)		н				
Emergency Rescues	4*	Н				
Traffic Control		Н				
Transport						
Emergency	4*	Н				
Priority Cargo	5	Н				
Official Personnel		Н				
Personnel in Custody		м				
Narcotics Detection		**				
Pollution Control		**				
Riot Control		н				
Fish/Game Law Control		**				
Other (Describe)						

Table A-1.--Ratings of Mission Priority and Helicopter Effectiveness, Ouestion 11.\*\*\*

\*Missions of Equal Priority

\*\*Missions for Which Vehicle Not Used

**\*\*\*Only Helicopter Section Is Included Here.** 

## Major Operating Problems

12.	List, in order of priority (most-severe first), 3 or 4 most significant problems encountered in your experi- ence with airborne vehicles. (To include problems such as excessive down time, unavailability of spares, high cost, etc., in addition to purely mission-operation problems.)
	Helicopters
	a
	b
	C
	d
	Fixed Wing
	a
	D
	d.
	STAT
	3101
	b.
	c
	d

Major Operating Problems (cont'd.)

	Othe	r							
	a.								
	b.	·····							
	с.								
	d.								
13.	Plea	ise p ments	rovide any you feel	furtl would	ner pr be he	oblem lpful	inform to the	nation o survey	r :
Cost									
	5								
14.	Prov sour	vide cce o	the procur f funds fo	ement r eacl	means h airc	, the raft:	costs,	, and th	е
Heli	copte	ers							
Make and Mode	Le c <u>1 Bu</u>	ease or ly	Date Acquired	Cost (per tota	of ba year l cost	sic v if le if b	ehicle <sup>*</sup> ased, ought)	Perce funds LEAA	nt of from Other
									. <u></u>
Fixe	d Wir	ng							
STOL									
				_					

\*Not including special L.E. gear such as special communication equipment, searchlights, P.A. systems. Costs (cont'd)

Other

Make and	Lease or	Date	Cost of basic vehicle* (per year if leased,	Percer funds	nt of from
Model	Buy	Acquired	total cost if bought)	LEAA	Other
		and the second			

15. Provide the costs of special L.E. gear such as communications equipment, searchlights, P.A. systems.

## Helicopters

Make	and Model	Cost	Percent of LEAA	funds from Other
Fixe	d Wing			
STOL				
Othe	<u>r</u>			
<del></del>				
16.	Check the items agency performs	that indicate that its aircraft ma	he manner in intenance:	which your
]	How Performed	Routine Maint	enance Eng	ine Overhaul
	In-house	•••		
	Contracted .	• •		

.

17. Operating and maintenance costs\* per flying hour:

Helicopter

Make and Model	Operating Cost Per Hour	Maintenance Cost Per Hour
Fixed Wing		
STOL		
Other		
		······································

\*If your agency does not separate operating costs from maintenance costs, please note the composite figure in operating cost column and write NA in maintenance cost column.

18. Check the cost elements comprising your agency's operating and maintenance costs:

Cost elements included in cost/flying hour figures	Operating Costs	Maintenance Costs
Gasoline and oil		
Salaries (air crew, ground crew		
mechanics		
Insurance		
Amortization of Purchase Price .		
Amortization of Lease Cost		
Pro-rata cost of operational & maintenance facilities		
Construction/mod. of opera- tional & maintenance facilities		
Rent of facilities		
Utilities		

18. (cont'd.)

Cost elements in cost/flying hour		Oper Co			rating osts		Maintenance Costs			
Aircraft Replace	ment Res	erv	e.	•						
Engine Overhaul	Reserve	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Spare Parts .	• • •	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	
Other (List)										·
		•	•	•						
		•	•	•						

19. Your agency's approximate annual budget for the airborne unit for Fiscal Year 1976, by source of funds:

Total Budget	Percentage Source	e of Funds
	LEAA	Other

Not including salaries or Helicopters.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

.

.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

#### Books

Adams, Thomas F. Law Enforcement. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1966.

\_\_\_\_\_. <u>Training Officers Handbook</u>. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1964.

- Blum, Richard H. Police Selection. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1964.
- Bordua, David, ed. The Police: Six Sociological Essays. New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1967.
- Bromberg, Walter. Crime and the Mind. New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1968.
- Caldwell, Harry. <u>Basic Law Enforcement</u>. Pacific Palisades, Cal.: Goodyear Publishing Co., 1972.
- Campbell, Donald T., and Julian C. Stanley. Experimental and Quasi-Experimental Designs for Research. Chicago: Rand McNally, 1973.
- Chapman, Samuel G., ed. Police Patrol Practices. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1972.
  - \_\_\_\_\_. Police Patrol Readings. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1964.

\_\_\_\_\_. The Police Heritage in England and America. East Lansing: Michigan State University Press, 1962.

- Clark, Donald E., and Samuel G. Chapman. <u>A Forward Step:</u> <u>Educational Backgrounds for Policemen</u>. Springfield, <u>Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1966</u>.
- Clift, Raymond E. <u>A Guide to Modern Police Thinking: A</u> <u>Panoramic View of Policing</u>. Cincinnati: W. H. <u>Anderson Co.</u>, 1965.

Cramer, James. The World's Police. London: Cassell, 1964.

- Critchley, T. A. A History of Police in England and Wales. London: Constable and Co., Ltd., 1967.
- Cushman, Frank. <u>Training Procedures</u>. New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1940.
- Devlin, J. Daniel. <u>Police Procedure, Administration and</u> Organization. London: Butterworth and Co., 1966.
- Dewey, John. Experience and Education. New York: Collier Books, 1963 reprint.
- Folley, Vern L. American Law Enforcement. Boston: Holbrook Press, 1973.
- Fosdick, Raymond B. American Police Systems. New York: The Century Co., 1920.
- \_\_\_\_\_. European Police Systems. New York: The Century Co., 1915.
- Frost, Thomas M. <u>A Forward Look in Police Education</u>. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1959.
- Gammage, Allen Z. Police Training in the United States. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1963.
- Germann, A. C.; Frank D. Day; and Robert R. J. Gallati. <u>Introduction to Law Enforcement and Criminal</u> <u>Justice</u>. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, <u>1969</u>.
- Glaser, Robert. Training, Research and Education. New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1965.
- Gordon, Kermit, ed. Agenda for the Nation. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institute, 1968.
- Graper, Elmer D. American Police Administration. Mont-Clair, N.J.: Patterson Smith, 1969.
- Hart, J. M. The British Police. London: Allen and Unwin, 1951.
- Jenkins, David H., and Charles A. Blackman. Antecedents and Effects of Administrative Behavior. Columbus, Ohio: Ohio State University Press, 1956.
- Klotter, John C. <u>Techniques for Police Instructors</u>. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1963.

- Kooken, Don L. Ethics in Police Service. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1959.
- Larson, Richard C. <u>Urban Police Patrol Analysis</u>. Cambridge, Mass.: M.I.T. Press, 1972.
- Leonard, V. A. Police Crime Prevention. Springfield, Ill.: Charles C. Thomas, 1972.

<u>Police Organization and Management</u>. Brooklyn: Foundation Press, Inc., 1951.

- Niederhoffer, Arthur, and Abraham S. Blumberg, eds. The Ambivalent Force: Perspectives on the Police. Waltham, Mass.: Xerox College Publishing, 1970.
- Quinney, Richard, ed. Crime and Justice in Society. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1969.
- Reith, Charles. <u>A New Study of Police History</u>. London: Oliver and Boyd, 1956.
- \_\_\_\_\_. The Blind Eye of History. New York: Appleton and Boyd, 1956.
- Richardson, James F. Urban Police in the United States. Port Washington, N.Y.: Kennikat Press, 1974.
- Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr., and Dixon R. Fox, eds. A History of American Life, Vol. 12. New York: Macmillan Co., 1931.
- Smith, Bruce. Police Systems in the United States. Rev. Ed. New York: Harper and Row, 1960.
- Solmes, Alwyn. <u>The English Policeman, 1871-1935</u>. London: Allen and Unwin, 1935.
- Trojanowicz, Robert C.; John M. Trojanowicz; and Forrest M. Moss. Community Based Crime Prevention. Pacific Palisades, Cal.: Goodyear Publishing Co., 1975.
- Turner, William. The Police Establishment. New York: Putnam, 1968.
- Upson, Lent D. <u>Practice of Municipal Administration</u>. New York: The Century Co., 1926.
- Vollmer, August. The Police and Modern Society. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1936.
- Whitaker, Ben. <u>The Police</u>. Middlesex, England: Penguin Books, 1964.
•

- Williams, E. W. Modern Law Enforcement and Police Science. Springfield, III.: Charles C. Thomas, 1967.
- Wilson, James Q. Varieties of Police Behavior. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1968.
- Wilson, O. W. Police Administration. 2nd Edition. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1963.

## Publications of and for the Government, Learned Societies and Other Organizations

- Aerospace Industries Association. Directory of Helicopter Operators in the United States, Canada and Puerto Rico. Washington, D.C.: Aerospace Industries Association of America, Inc., 1974.
- American Bar Association Project on Standards for Criminal Justice. <u>Standards Relating to the Urban Police</u> <u>Function</u>. Tentative Draft. New York: The American Bar Association, March 1972.
- Chester, J. M. et al. <u>A Preliminary Survey of State</u>, <u>County and Local Law Enforcement Agencies Utilizing</u> <u>Airborne Vehicles</u>, Vol. 1 and 2. McLean, Va.: <u>The Mitre Corp.</u>, 1975.
- Devine, James T. <u>Helicopter Procurement</u>. Law Enforcement Assistance Administration Guideline--G7370.2, to LEAA Professional Personnel and State Planning Agencies, July 30, 1973.
- International Association of Chiefs of Police. <u>Proceedings</u>, 1929 Annual Convention. New York: Arno Press, 1930.
- International City Manager's Association. <u>Municipal Police</u> <u>Administration</u>. Chicago: International City <u>Manager's Association</u>, 1954.
- Kelley, Clarence. Crime in the United States. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1974.
- Kelling, George F. et al. <u>The Kansas City Preventive Patrol</u> <u>Experiment, A Summary Report</u>. Washington, D.C.: Police Foundation, 1974.
- Murphy, Michael J. "Establishing a Police University Program." <u>Police Yearbook</u>. Washington, D.C.: International Association of Chiefs of Police, 1963.

- National Commission on Law Observance and Enforcement. <u>The Police, Report No. 14</u>. Washington, D.C.: U.S. <u>Government Printing Office</u>, 1930.
- National Institute of Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice. <u>Police Training and Performance Study</u>. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, September 1970.

. The Utilization of Helicopters for Police Air Mobility. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1971.

- Olson, Bruce T. Patterns of Law Enforcement, Research by Questionnaire. East Lansing: Michigan State University Press, 1968.
- President's Commission on Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice. <u>The Challenge of Crime in a Free Society</u>. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1967.
  - . Report of the Task Force on the Police. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1967.

. Report of the Task Force on Science and Technology. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1967.

- Royal Commission on the Police. Final Report. London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1962.
- Schmidt, Willard E. Occupational Training for Law Enforcement in the California Colleges. Sacramento: California State Department of Education, 1950.
- Simonsen, Clifford E. An Evaluation of Helicopter Patrol Activities in Columbus. Columbus, Ohio: Program for Study of Crime and Delinquency, 1974.
- Tenney, Charles W., Jr. Higher Education Programs in Law Enforcement and Criminal Justice. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1971.

## Periodicals

Aaron, Thomas J. "Education and Professionalization in American Law Enforcement." <u>Police</u> (November-December 1965):37-41. 

- Ayoob, Massad F. "Small Helicopter Wings Are Effective for Law Enforcement." Law and Order (November 1974), pp. 74-80.
- Brandstatter, Arthur F. "Field Training in MSU's Program." Police Chief 29 (May 1962):22.

. "The School of Police Administration and Public Safety, Michigan State University." Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology, and Police Science 48 (January-February 1958):564.

- Brown, William P. "The Police and the Academic World." Police Chief 32 (May 1965):8-12.
- Davis, Edward M. "Astro: Los Angeles Police Department Helicopter Program." <u>Police Chief</u> 38 (November 1971):10, 66-67.
- Davis, Edward M, and Lyle Knowles. "A Critique of the Report: An Evaluation of the Kansas City Preventive Patrol Experiment." Police Chief 42 (June 1975): 22-29.
- Felkenes, George T. "Some Legal Aspects of the Use of Aircraft in Law Enforcement." Police Chief 36 (February 1969):28-30.
- . "The Right of Privacy: Police Surveillance by Aircraft." Journal of Police Science and Administration 1 (September 1973):345-48.
- Gourley, G. Douglas. "Police Discipline." Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology, and Police Science 41 (May-June 1950):85-100.
- Hirsch, Gary B., and Lucius J. Riccio. "Measuring and Improving the Productivity of Police Patrol." Journal of Police Science and Administration 2 (June 1974):169-84.
- Holzer, Marc. "Police Productivity: A Conceptual Framework for Measurement and Improvement." Journal of Police Science and Administration 1 (December 1973): 459-67.
- Kelling, George L., and Tony Pate. "Response to the Davis-Knowles Critique." Police Chief 42 (June 1975): 32-38.
- Kinser, John G. "Crime Displacement." Police Chief 41 (August 1974):66-67.

- Knowles, Lyle, and Joseph C. De Laduranty. "Performance Evaluation." Journal of Police Science and Administration 2 (March 1974):28-33.
- Krumrei, David P. "Up, Up and Away." Michigan Police Officer, Winter 1974, pp. 26-65.
- La Teef, A. Bari. "Helicopter Patrol in Law Enforcement--An Evaluation." Journal of Police Science and Administration 2 (March 1974):62-65.
- Maltz, Michael D. "Evaluation of Air Mobility Programs." Police Chief 38 (April 1971):34-39.
- Misner, Gordon E. "Enforcement: Illusion of Security." The Nation 208 (April 1969):488-90.
- Morgan, J. M., Jr., and R. Scott Fosler. "Police Productivity." Police Chief 41 (July 1974):28-30.
- Murphy, Patrick V. "A Commentary, The Davis-Knowles Observations." Police Chief 42 (June 1975):30.
- Rhead, Clifton et al. "The Psychological Assessment of Police Candidates." American Journal of Psychiatry 124 (May 1968):1575-80.
- Smith, Alexander et al. "Authoritarianism in College and Non-College Oriented Police." Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology and Police Science 58 (March 1967): 128-32.
- Smith, Alexander et al. "Authoritarianism in Police College Students and Non-Police College Students." Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology and Police Science 59 (September 1968):440-43.
- Webster, John. "Police Task and Time Study." Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology, and Police Science 61 (January 1970):94-100.
- Whisenand, Paul M. "The Use of Helicopter by Police." Police Chief 36 (February 1968):32.
- Wilson, James Q. "What Makes A Better Policeman." Atlantic Monthly 223 (March 1969):129-35.

## Newspaper Articles

Frazier, Dick. "Eye in Sky Copter Here to Stay." Lansing State Journal, Sunday, July 7, 1974, Section B, p. 4.

## Unpublished Materials

- Isaac, Albert Gerald. "A Study of the Motivational Forces Leading to a Police Career and their Relationship to Job Performance." Unpublished Master's Thesis, Michigan State University, 1972.
- Trojanowicz, Robert Chester. "A Comparison of the Behavioral Styles of Policemen and Social Workers." Unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation, College of Social Science, Michigan State University, 1969.

